



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

A

764,206





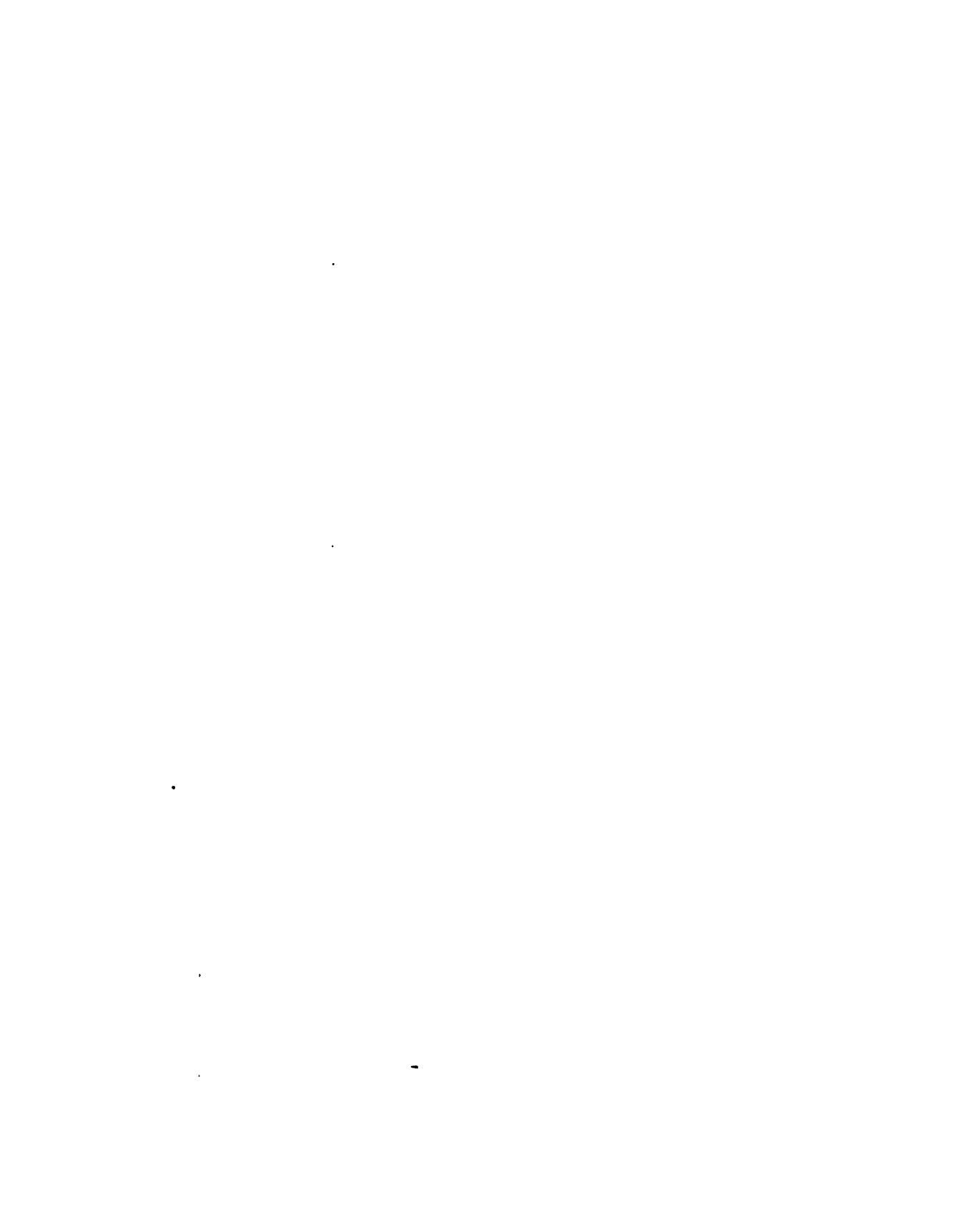


**THE TUDOR
TRANSLATIONS**

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XIV



Cervantes Saavedra, Miguel de, 1547-1616.

THE HISTORY OF
DON QUIXOTE
OF THE MANCHA
TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH
OF MIGUEL DE CERVANTES BY
THOMAS SHELTON

ANNIS 1612, 1620

With Introductions by
JAMES FITZMAURICE-KELLY

VOLUME II



LONDON
Published by DAVID NUTT
IN THE STRAND
1896

Storage

Undergraduate

↑ 31V

PQ

6329

.A2

1896

v.2

Edinburgh: T. and A. CONSTABLE, Printers to Her Majesty

THE TABLE OF THE FOURTH BOOKE of the delightfull Historie of Don-Quixote

CHAPTER I

Wherein is discoursed the new and pleasant adventure, that
happened to the Curate and Barber in Sierra Morena . . . 1

CHAPTER II

Which treates of the discretion of the beautifull Dorotea : and of
the artificiall maner used to dissuade the amorous Knight
from continuing his penance, and how hee was gotten away ;
with many other delightfull and pleasant occurrences . . . 18

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and
those of his companie, after that he had abandoned the
rigorous place of his penance 31

CHAPTER IV

Of the pleasant discourses continued betweene Don-Quixote, and
his Squire Sancho Pança, with other adventures 43

CHAPTER V

Treating of that which befell all Don-Quixotes traine in the Inne 53

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is recounted the novell of the Curious Impertinent . . . 61

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is prosecuted the novell of the Curious Impertinent . . . 83

THE FIRST PART OF THE

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is finished the novell of the Curious Impertinent : and
likewise recounted the rough encounter passed betweene Don-
Quixote, and certaine bagges of red Wine 104

CHAPTER IX

Which treates of many rare successes befallen in the Inne 114

CHAPTER X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Mico-
micona, with other delightfull adventures 125

CHAPTER XI

Treating of the curious discourse made by Don-Quixote, upon
the exercise of Armes and Letters 136

CHAPTER XII

Wherein the captive recounteth his life, and other accidents 141

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the Captive 150

CHAPTER XIV

Wherein the Captive yet continueth the pleasant narration of his
life 164

CHAPTER XV

Which speakes of that which befell afterward in the Inne, and of
sundrie other things worthy of knowledge 186

CHAPTER XVI

Wherein is recounted the Historie of the Lackey, with other
strange adventures befallen in the Inne 194

CHAPTER XVII

Wherein are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne 205
vi

HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein are decided the controversies of Mambrinos Helmet, and the Asse pannell, with other strange adventures most doubtlesly befallen	<small>PAGE</small>
	214

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers: and the great ferociti of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was enchanted	223
---	-----

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes enchantment, with other famous occurrences	232
--	-----

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the Canon continueth his discourse upon Bookes of Chivalrie with many other things worthy of his note	243
--	-----

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein is laide downe the very discrete discourse that passed betweene Sanco Panca and his Lord Don-Quixote	252
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIII

Of the discrete contention passed betweene Don-Quixote and the Canon, with other accidents	260
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIV

Relating that which the Goateheard told to those that carried away Don-Quixote	267
---	-----

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling out of Don-Quixote with the Goateheard : with the adventure of the disciplinants, to which the Knight gave end although to his cost	273
--	-----

THE FOURTH BOOKE

CHAPTER I

Wherein is discoursed the new and pleasant adventure that hapned to the Curate and Barber,
in Sierra Morena.



OST happy and fortunate were those times, wherein the thrise audacious and bold Knight Don-Quixote of the Mancha was bestowed on the world; by whose most Honorable resolution, to revive and reue in it the already worne out, and welnigh diseased exercise of armes, wee joy in this our so niggard and scant an age of all pastimes, not onely the sweetnesse of his true Historie, but also of the other tales, and digressions contained therein, which are in some respects lesse pleasing, artificiall and true, then the very History it selfe. The which prosecuting the carded, spun, and selfetwined threeede of the relation sayes, that as the Curate began to bethinke himselfe upon some answere that might both confort and animate Cardenio, hee was hindered by a voyce which came to his hearing, said very dolefully the words ensuing:

O God ! is it possible that I have yet found out the place which may serve for a hidden Sepulchre, to the load of this loathsome body that I unwillingly beare so long ? Yes it may be, if the solitarinesse of these rockes doe not illude me, ah unfortunate that I am ! How much more gratefull

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

companions will these cragges and thickets prove to my designes, by affoarding me leisure to communicate my mishaps to heaven with plaints; then that if any mortall man living, since there is none upon earth from whom may be expected counsell in doubts, ease in complaints, or in harmes remedie. The Curate and his companions heard and understood all the words cleerely, and for as much as they conjectured (as indeede it was) that those plaints were delivered very neere unto them, they did all arise to search out the plaintiffe; and having gone some twenty steppes thence, they beheld a young youth behinde a rocke, sitting under an Ashe tree, and attired like a country Swaine, whom by reason his face was inclined, as hee sate washing of his feete in the cleere streme that glided that way, they could not perfectly discerne; and therefore approched towards him with so great silence, as they were not descryed by him who only attended to the washing of his feet, which were so white, as they properly resembled two pieces of cleere crystall, that grew among the other stones of the streme. The whitenesse and beauty of the feet amazed them, being not made as they well conjectured, to tread cloddes, or measure the steps of lazie Oxen, and holding the Plow, as the youthes apparrell would perswade them; and therefore the Curate, who went before the rest, seeing they were not yet espyed, made signes to the other two that they should divert a little out of the way, or hide themselves behinde some broken cliffes that were neere the place, which they did all of them, noting what the youth did with very great attention. He wore a little browne Capouch, gyrt very neere to his body with a white Towell; also a paire of Breeches and Gamashoes of the same coloured cloth, and on his head a clay-coloured Cap. His Gamashoes were lifted up halfe the legge, which verily seemed to be white Alabaster. Finally, having washed his feet, taking out a linnen Kerchife from under his Cappe, he dried them therewithall, and at the taking out of the Kerchife, he held up his face, and then those which stood gazing on him, had leisure to discerne an unmatchable beautie, so surpassing great, as Cardenio rounding the Curate in the eare, said,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

This bodie, since it is not Luscinda, can be no humane creature, but a divine. The youth tooke off his Cappe at last, and shaking his head to the one and other part, did disheavell and discover such beautifull haire, as those of Phœbus might justly emulate them: and thereby they knew the supposed Swaine to be a delicate woman, yea and the fairest that ever the first two had seene in their lives, or Cardenio himselfe, the lovely Luscinda excepted; for as he after affirmed, no feature save Luscindas could contend with hers. The long and golden haire did not onely cover her shoulders, but did also hide her round about, in such sort, as (her feet excepted) no other part of her body appeared, they were so neere and long. At this time her hands served her for a Combe, which as her feet seemed pieces of crystall in the water, so did they appeare among her haire like pieces of driven Snow. All which circumstances did possesse the three which stood gazing at her with great admiration, and desire to know what she was; and therefore resolved to shew themselves; and with the noyse which they made when they arose, the beautifull mayden held up her head, and removing her haire from before her eyes with both hands, she espyed those that had made it, and presently arising full of feare and trouble, shee laid hand on a packet that was by her, which seemed to be of apparell, and thought to flie away, without staying to pull on her shooes, or to gather up her haire: But scarce had shee gone sixe paces, when her delicate and tender feete, unable to abide the rough encounter of the stones, made her to fall to the earth. Which the three perceiving, they came out to her, and the Curate arriving first of all, said to her: Lady, whatsoeuer you be, stay and feare nothing; for we which you beholde here, come only with intention to doe you service, and therefore you need not pretend so impertinent a flight, which neither your feete can endure nor would we permit. The poore Gyrtle remained so amazed and confounded, as shee answered not a word: wherefore the Curate and the rest drawing neerer, he tooke her by the hand, and then hee prosecuted his speech, saying, What your habit concealed from us, Ladie, your haire

CHAPTER
I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

have bewrayed, being manifest arguments that the causes were of no smal moment, which have thus bemasked your singular beauty, under so unworthy array, and conducted you to this all-abandoned desart; wherein it was a wonderfull chaunce to have met you, if not to remedie your harmes, yet at least to give you some comfort, seeing no evill can afflict and vexe one so much, and plunge him in so deepe extreames, (whilst it deprives not the life) that will wholly abhorre from listening to the advice that is offered, with a good and sincere intention; so that, faire Ladie, or Lord, or what else you shall please to be termed, shake off your affrightment, and rehearse unto us your good or ill fortune, for you shall finde in us joyntly, or in every one apart, companions to helpe you to deplore your disasters.

Whilst the Curate made this speech, the disguised woman stood as one halfe asleepe, now beholding the one, now the other, without once moving her lippe or saying a word; much like unto a rusticke Clowne, when rare and unseene things to him before, are unexpectedly presented to his view. But the Curate insisting and using other perswasive reasons addrest to that effect, won her at last to make a breach on her tedious silence, and with a profound sigh, blow open her curall gates, saying somewhat to this effect: Since the solitarinesse of these rockes hath not beene potent to conceale me, nor the disheaveling of my disordered haire, licensed my tongue to belie my sexe, it were in vaine for me to faine that anew, which, if you beleived it, would be more for courtesies sake then any other respect. Which presupposed, I say, good Sirs, that I doe gratifie you highly for the liberall offers you have made me; which are such, as have bound me to satisfie your demaund as neere as I may; although I feare the relation which I must make to you of my mishappes, will breed sorrow at once with compassion in you, by reason you shal not be able to find any salve that may cure, comfort, or beguile them: yet notwithstanding, to the end my reputation may not hover longer suspended in your opinions, seeing you know me to be a woman, and view me, young, alone, and thus attyred,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

being things all of them able either joyned or parted, to overthrow the best credite, I must be enforced to unfold, what I could otherwise most willingly conceale. All this, she that appeared so comely, spoke without stoppe or staggering, with so ready deliverie and so sweete a voice, as her discretion admired them no lesse then her beautie. And renewing againe their complements and intreaties to her, to accomplish speedily her promise, she setting all coynes apart, drawing on her shooes very modestly, and winding up her haire, sate her downe on a stone, and the other three about her, where she used no little violence to smother certaine rebellious teares that strove to breake forth without her permission: and then with a reposed and cleere voyce she began the Historie of her life in this manner.

In this Province of Andaluzia there is a certaine Towne, from whence a Duke derives his denomination, which makes him one of those in Spain are call'd Grandes: He hath two sonnes, the elder is heire of his States, and likewise, as may be presumed, of his vertues: the younger is heire I know not of what, if it bee not of *Vellido his treacheries, or Galalons frauds. My parents are this Noblemans vassals, of humble and low calling; but so rich, as if the goods of nature had equalled those of their fortunes, then should they have had nothing else to desire, nor I feared to see my selfe in the misfortunes, wherein I now am plunged. For perhaps my mishaps proceede from that of theirs, in not being nobly descended. True it is that they are not so base, as they should therefore shame their calling, nor so high as may check my conceit, which perswades me, that my disasters proceede from their lownesse. In conclusion, they are but Farmours, and plaine people, but without any touch or spot of badde bloud, and as we usually say, Olde rustie Christians, yet so rustie and auncient, as it, their riches, and magnificent porte, gaines them by little and little the title of Gentilitie; yea, and of worship also; although the treasure and Nobility, whereof they made most price and account, was to have had me for their daughter: and therefore as well by reason that they had none other heire

CHAPTER
I
Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

*One that
murdered
Sancho King
of Castile, as
he was easing
himselfe at
the siege of
Camora.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

then my selfe, as also because as affectionate parents, they held mee most deere : I was one of the most made of and cherished daughters that ever father brought up : I was the mirrouer wherein they beheld themselves, the staffe of their olde age, and the subject to which they addrest all their desires. From which, because they were most vertuous, mine did not stray an inch : and even in the same manner that I was Ladie of their mindes, so was I also of their goods. By me were servants admitted or dismissed : the notice and account of what was sowed or reaped, past through my hands, of the Oyle-mils, the Wine-presses, the number of great and little cattell, the Bee-hives ; in fine, of all that which so rich a Farmour as my Father was, had or could have ; I kept the account, and was the Steward thereof and Mistresse, with such care of my side, and pleasure of theirs, as I cannot possibly endeere it enough. The times of leisure that I had in the day, after I had given what was necessary to the head servants, and other labourers, I did entertaine in those exercises, which were both commendable and requisite for maydens, to wit, in sowing, making of bone-lace, and many times handling the Distaffe : and if sometimes I left those exercises to recreate my minde a little, I would then take some godly booke in hand, or play at the Harpe ; for experience had taught me, that musicke ordereth disordered mindes, and doth lighten the passions that afflict the spirit. This was the life which I led in my fathers house : the recounting whereof so particularly, hath not beeene done for ostentation, nor to give you to understand that I am rich, but to the end you may note how much, without mine owne fault, have I falne from that happy state I have said, unto the unhappy plight into which I am now reduced. The Historie therefore is this, that passing my life in so many occupations, and that with such recollection as might bee compared to a religious life, unseene as I thought by any other person then those of our house : for when I went to Masse, it was commonly so earely, and so accompanied by my mother and other mayd-servants ; and I my selfe so coverd and watchfull, as mine eyes did scarce see the earth whereon I treade : and yet notwithstanding

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

standing those of love, or as I may better terme them, of idlenesse, to which Linces Eyes may not bee compared, did represent me to Don Ferdinandos affection and care; for this is the name of the Dukes younger sonne, of whom I spake before. Scarce had she named Don Ferdinand when Cardenio changed colour, and began to sweat with such alteration of bodie and countenance, as the Curate and Barber which beheld it, feared that the accident of frenzie did assault him which was wont as they had heard to possesse him at times. But Cardenio did nothing else then sweat, and stood still beholding now and then the countrye gyrtle imagining straight what she was, who without taking notice of his alteration, followed on her discourse in this manner. And scarce had he seene mee, when (as he himselfe after confess) he abode greatly surprized by my love, as his actions did after give evident demonstration.

But to conclude soone the relation of those misfortunes which have no conclusion, I will overslip in silence the diligences and practises of Don Ferdinand used to declare unto me his affection: he suborned all the folke of the house. He bestowed gifts and favours on my parents: every day was a holy day, and a day of sports in the streets where I dwelled: at night no man could sleepe for musicke; the letters were innumerable that came to my hands, without knowing who brought them; farsed too full of amorous conceits and offers; and contayning more promises and protestations then they had characters. All which, not onely could not mollifie my mind, but rather hardened it as much as if hee were my mortal enemie, and therefore did construe all the indevours he used to gaine my good will, to be practised to a contrary end: which I did not, as accounting Don Ferdinand ungentle, or that I esteemed him too importunat, for I took a kind of delight to see my selfe so highly esteemed and beloved of so noble a Gentleman: nor was I any thing offended to see his papers written in my praise; for if I be not deceived in this point, be we women ever so foule, we love to heare men call us beautifull. But mine honesty was that which opposed it selfe unto all these things, and the continuall

CHAPTER
I
Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

admonitions of my parents, which had by this plainly perceived Don Fernandos pretence, as one that cared not all the world should know it. They would often say unto me, that they had deposited their honours and reputation in my vertue alone and discretion, and bad me consider the inequality that was betweene Don Fernando and me, and that I might collect by it how his thoughts (did he ever so much affirme the contrary) were more addrest to compasse his pleasures then my profit: And that if I feared any inconvenience might befall, to the end they might crosse it, and cause him to abandon his so unjust a pursuit, they would match me where I most liked, eyther to the best of that towne, or any other towne adjoyning, saying, they might easily compasse it, both by reason of their great wealth and my good report. I fortified my resolution and integritie with these certaine promises, and the knowne truth which they told me, and therefore would never answer to Don Fernando any word, that might ever so farre of argue the least hope of condiscending to his desires. All which cautions of mine which I thinke he deemed to be disdains, did inflame more his lascivious appetite (for this is the name wherewithall I intitle his affection towards me) which had it beene such as it ought, you had not knowne it now, for then the cause of revealing it had not befallne me. Finally Don Fernando understood how my parents meant to marrie me, to the end they might illude his hope of ever possessing me: or at least set more gards to preserve mine honour, and this newes or surmise was an occasion that he did, what you shall presently heare.

For one night as I sate in my chamber, only attended by a young Mayden that served me, I having shut the doores very safe, for feare lest through any negligence my honestie might incur any danger, without knowing or imagining how it might happen: notwithstanding all my diligences used and preventions, and amidst the solitude of this silence and recollection, he stood before me in my chamber. At his presence I was so troubled, as I lost both sight and speech, and by reason thereof could not crie, nor I thinke he would not, though I had attempted it, permit me. For

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

he presently ranne over to me, and taking me betweene his armes (for as I have said, I was so amazed, as I had no power to defend my selfe) he spake such things to me, as I knew not how it is possible that so many lies should have ability to faine things resembling in shew so much the truth: and the traytor caused teares, to give credit to his words and sighes, to give countenance to his intention. I poore soule being alone amidst my friends, and weakly practised in such affaires, began I know not how to account his leesings for verities, but not in such sort, as his teares or sighes might any wise move me to any compassion that were not commendable. And so the first trouble and amazement of mind being past, I began againe to recover my defective spirits, and then said to him with more courage then I thought I should have had, if as I am, my Lord, betweene your armes, I were betweene the pawes of a fierce Lyon, and that I were made certaine of my liberty on condition to doe or say any thing prejudiciale to mine honour, it would proove as impossible for me to accept it, as for that which once hath beene, to leave off his essence and being. Wherefore even as you have ingyrt my middle with your armes, so likewise have I tied fast my minde with vertuous and forcible desires, that are wholy discrepant from yours, as you shall perceive, if seeking to force me, you presume to passe further with your inordinate designe. I am your vassall, but not your slave, nor hath the nobility of your bloud power, nor ought it to harden, to dishonour, staine or hold in little account the humility of mine; and I doe esteeme my selfe though a countrey wench and farmers daughter, as much as you can your selfe, though a Nobleman and a Lord: With me your violence shall not prevaile, your riches gaine any grace, your words have power to deceive, or your sighes and teares be able to move: yet if I shall finde any of these properties mentioned in him, whom my parents shall please to bestow on mee for my spouse, I will presently subject my will to his, nor shall it ever varie from his minde a jot: So that if I might remaine with honor, although I rested void of delights, yet would I willingly bestow on

CHAPTER
I
Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

you, that which you presently labour so much to obtaine : all which I doe say, to divert your straying thought from ever thinking that any one may obtaine of me ought, who is not my lawfull spouse. If the let onely consistes therein, most beautifull Dorotea (for so I am called) answered the disloyall Lord : behold, I give thee here my hand to be thine alone : and let the heavens, from which nothing is concealed ; and this Image of our Lady which thou hast heere present, be witnesses of this truth. When Cardenio heard her say that she was called Dorotea, hee fell againe into his former suspicion, and in the end confirmed his first opinion to bee true : but would not interrupt her speech, being desirous to know the successe, which he knew wholy almost before, and therefore said only. Lady, is it possible that you are named Dorotea ? I have heard report of another of that name, which perhaps hath runne the like course of your misfortunes : but I request you to continue your relation ; for a time may come, wherein I may recount unto you things of the same kinde, which will breed no small admiration. Dorotea noted Cardenios words, and his uncouth and disastrous attire, and then intreated him very instantly, if hee knew any thing of her affaires, he would acquaint her therewithall. For if fortune had left her any good, it was onely the courage which she had to beare patiently any disaster that might befall her, being certaine in her opinion, that no new one could arrive, which might increase a whit those she had alreadie. Ladie, I would not let slip the occasion (quoth Cardenio) to tell you what I thinke, if that which I imagine were true : and yet there is no commoditie left to doe it : nor can it availe you much to know it. Let it be what it list, said Dorotea : but that which after befell of my relation, was this : That Don Fernando tooke an Image that was in my Chamber for witnesse of our contract, and added withall most forcible words and unusuall oathes, promising unto me to become my husband. Although I warned him, before he had ended his speech, to see well what he did, and to weigh the wrath of his father, when he should see him married to one so base, and his vassall, and that there-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

fore he should take heed that my beautie such as it was
should not blinde him. Seeing hee should not finde therein
a sufficient excuse for his errour: and that if he meant to
doe me any good, I conjured him by the love that he bore
unto me, to license my fortunes to roule in their owne
spheare, according as my quality reached: For such un-
equall matches doe never please long, nor persever with
that delight wherewithall they begunne.

All the reasons heere rehearsed, I said unto him, and
many moe; which now are falne out of minde, but yet
proved of no efficacy to weane him from his obstinate pur-
pose, even like unto one that goeth to buy; with intention
never to pay for what he takes: and therefore never con-
siders the price, worthinesse, or faultlesse of the stiffe he
takes to credit. I at this season made a briefe discourse, and
said thus to my selfe: I may doe this, for I am not the first
which by matrimonie hath ascended from a low degree to
a high estate: nor shall Don Fernando be the first whom
beautie or blind affection (for that is the most certaine)
hath induced to make choyce of a consort unequall to his
greatnesse. Then since herein I create no new world, nor
custome, what error can be committed by embracing the
honour wherewithall fortune crownes me? Although it so
befell, that his affection to me endured no longer then till
he accomplish his will: for before God, I certes shall still
remaine his wife. And if I should disdainfully give him
the repulse, I see him now in such termes, as perhaps for-
getting the dutie of a Noble man, hee may use violence, and
then shall I remaine for ever dishonoured, and also without
excuse of the imputations of the ignorant which knew not
how much without any fault I have falne into this inevitable
danger. For, what reasons may be sufficiently forcible to
perswade my father and other, that this Noble man did
enter into my Chamber without my consent? All these
demaunds and answers did I in an instant revolve in mine
imagination, and found my selfe chiefly forced (how I cannot
tell) to assent to his petition, by the witnesses hee invoked,
the teares hee shed, and finally by his sweete disposition and
comely feature, which accompanied with so many arguments

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

of unfained affection, were able to conquer and enthrall any other heart, though it were as free and wary as mine owne. Then called I for my waiting maide, that she might on earth accompany the celestiall witnesses. And then Don Fernando turned againe to reiterate and confirme his oathes, and added to his former, other new Saints as witnesses ; and wished a thousand succeeding maledictions to light on him, if he did not accomplish his promise to mee. His eyes againe waxed moyst, his sighes increased, and himselfe inwreathed mee more straightly betweene his armes, from which he had never once loosed mee : and with this, and my Maydens departure, I left to be a Mayden, and hee beganne to be a traytor, and disloyall man. The day that succeeded to the night of my mishaps, came not I think so soone as Don Fernando desired it : for after a man hath satisfied that which the appetite covets, the greatest delight it can take after is to apart it selfe from the place where the desire was accomplished. I say this, because Don Fernando did hasten his departure from me, by my Maids industrie, who was the very same that had brought him into my chamber, hee was got in the streete before dawning. And at his departure from mee, he said (although not with so great shew of affection and vehemencie, as hee had used at his comming) that I might bee secure of his faith, and that his oathes were firme most true : and for a more confirmation of his word hee tooke a rich ring off his finger, and put it on mine. In fine he departed and I remained behinde I cannot well say, whether joyfull or sad ; but this much I know that I rested confused and pensive, and almost beside my selfe for the late mischance ; yet eyther I had not the heart, or else I forgot to chide my Maide for her treacherie committed by shutting up Don Fernando in my chamber : for as yet I could not determine, whether that which had befallne mee, was a good or an evill. I said to Don Fernando at his departure that he might see mee other nights when he pleased by the same meanes hee had come that night seeing I was his owne, and would rest so, untill it pleased him to let the world know that I was his wife. But hee never returned

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

againe, but the next night following ; [nor] could I see him after, for the space of a moneth eyther in the streeete or Church, so as I did but spend time in vaine to expect him : although I understood that hee was still in towne, and rode everie other day a hunting : an exercise to which hee was much addicted.

Those dayes were, I know, unfortunate and accursed to me, and those houres sorrowfull ; for in them I began to doubt, nay rather wholly to discredite Don Fernando his faith : and my maide did then heare loudly the checks I gave unto her for her presumption, ever untill then dissembled. And I was moreover constrained to watch and keepe guard on my teares and countenance, lest I should give occasion to my parents to demaund of mee the cause of my discontents, and thereby ingage me to use ambages or untruthes to cover them. But all this ended in an instant, one moment arriving whereon all these respects stumbled, all honourable discourses ended, patience was lost, and my most hidden secrets issued in publicke : which was, when there was spread a certaine rumour throughout the towne within a few dayes after, that Don Fernando had married in a Citie neere adjoyning, a damzell of surpassing beautie, and of very noble birth, although not so rich, as could deserve by her preferment or dowrie so worthy a husband. It was also said, that she was named Luscinda, with many other things that hapned at their Spousals, worthy of admiration. Cardenio hearing Luscinda named, did nothing else but lift up his shoulders, bite his lippe, bend his browes, and after a little while shedde from his eyes two floods of teares. But yet for all that, Dorotea did not interrupt the file of her Historie, saying, This dolefull newes came to my hearing, and my heart, in steede of freezing therat, was so inflamed with choler and rage, as I had wehnigh runne out to the streets, and with outcries published the deceit and treason that was done to me : but my furie was presently asswaged by the resolution which I made, to doe what I put in execution the very same night, and then I put on this habite which you see, being given unto me by one of those that among us Countrey-folke are called Swaines, who was

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER I
Wherein is discoursed the new and pleasant adventure that hapned to the Curate and Barber, in Sierra Morena.

my fathers servant; to whom I disclosed all my misfortunes, and requested him to accompany me to the Citie, where I understood mine enemie sojourned. He, after he had reprehended my boldnesse, perceiving me to have an inflexible resolution, made offer to attend on mee as hee said, unto the end of the world: and presently after I trussed up in a pillowbeare, a womans attire, some mony and jewels, to prevent necessities that might befall; and in the silence of night, without acquainting my treacherous maide with my purpose, I issued out of my house, accompanied by my servant, and many imaginations: and in that manner set on towards the Citie, and though I went on foote, was yet borne away flying, by my desires, to come, if not time enough to hinder that which was past, yet at least to demaund of Don Fernando that he would tell me with what conscience or soule he had done it. I arrived where I wished within two dayes and a halfe; and at the entry of the Citie I demaunded where Luscinda her father dwelled? and he of whom I first demaunded the question, answered me more then I desired to heare: he shewed me the house, and recounted to me all that befell at the daughters mariage, being a thing so publique and knowne in the Citie, as men made meetings of purpose to discourse thereof. Hee said to me, that the very night wherein Don Fernando was espoused to Luscinda, after that she had given her consent to be his wife, shee was instantly assayled by a terrible accident, that strucke her into a traunce, and her spouse approching to unclaspe her bosome, that she might take the ayre, found a paper foulded in it, written with Luscindas owne hand, wherein she said and declared, that she could not be Don Fernando's wife, because she was already Cardenioes, who was, as the man tolde me, a very principall Gentleman of the same Citie; and that if she had given her consent to Don Fernando, it was onely done, because she would not disobey her parents: in conclusion he tolde mee, that the Billet made also mention, how shee had a resolution to kill her selfe presently after the marriage, and did also lay downe therein the motives she had to doe it. All which, as they say, was confirmed by a poynard that was

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

found hidden about her in her apparrell. Which Don Fernando perceiving, presuming that Luscinda did flout him, and hold him in little account, hee set upon her ere she was come to her selfe, and attempted to kill her with the very same poynard ; and had done it, if her father and other friends which were present had not opposed themselves, and hindered his determination. Moreover, they reported that presently after Don Fernando absented himselfe from the Citie, and that Luscinda turned not out of her agony untill the next day, and then recounted to her parents how she was verily Spouse to that Cardenio of whom we spake even now. I learned besides that Cardenio as it is rumour'd, was present at the marriage, and that as soone as he saw her married, being a thing he would never have credited, departed out of the Citie in a desperate moode, but first left behinde him a letter, wherein he shewed at large the wrong Luscinda had done to him, and that hee himselfe meant to goe to some place where people should never after heare of him. All this was notorious, and publickly bruited throughout the Citie, and every one spoke thereof, but most of all having very soone after understood that Luscinda was missing from her Parents house and the Citie; for shee could not be found in neyther of both: for which her parents were almost beside themselves, not knowing what meanes to use to finde her.

These newes reduced my hopes againe to their rancks, and I esteemed it better to find Don Fernando unmarried then married, presuming that yet the gates of my remedy were not wholly shut, I giving my selfe to understand that heaven had peradventure set that impediment on the second marriage, to make him understand what hee ought to the first; and to remember, how he was a Christian, and that he was more obliged to his soule then to humane respects. I revolved all these things in my minde, and comfortlesse did yet comfort my selfe, by faining large yet languishing hopes, to sustaine that life which I now do so much abhor. And whilst I staide thus in the Citie, ignorant what I might doe, seeing I found not Don Fernando, I heard a

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

I

Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

cryer goe about publikely, promising great rewards to any one that could finde me out, giving signes of the very age and apparrell I wore. And I likewise heard it was bruited abroad, that the youth which came with me had carried me away from my fathers house. A thing that touched my soule very neerely, to view my credit so greatly wrackt, seeing that it was not sufficient to have lost it by my comming away, without the addition him with whom I departed, being a subject so base and unworthy of my loftier thoughts. Having heard this crie, I departed out of the Citie with my servant: who even then began to give tokens that he faultred in the fidelitie he had promised to me: and both of us together entred the very same night into the most hidden parts of this mountaine, fearing lest we might be found. But as it is commonly said, that one evill cals on another, and that the end of one disaster is the beginning of a greater, so proved it with me; for my good servant, untill then faithfull and trustie, rather incited by his owne villany then my beautie, thought to have taken the benefite of the oportunity which these inhabitable places offered; and sollicited me of love, with little shame and lesse feare of God, or respect of my selfe: and now seeing that I answered his impudencies with severe and reprehensive words, leaving the intreaties aside, wherewithall hee thought first to have compast his will, he beganne to use his force. But just heaven which seldome or never neglects the just mans assistance, did so favour my proceedings, as with my weake forces, and very little labour, I threw him downe a steepe rocke, and there I left him, I know not whether alive or dead. And presently I entred in among these mountaines, with more swiftnesse then my feare and wearinesse required; having therein no other project or designe, then to hide my selfe in them, and shunne my father and others, which by his intreaty and meanes sought for me everywhere. Some moneths are past since my first comming here, where I found a Heardman, who carried me to a village seated in the midst of these rockes, wherein he dwelled and intertained me, whom I have served as a Sheepheard

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

ever since, procuring as much as lay in me to abide still in the field, to cover these haires, which have now so unexpectedly betraide me. Yet all my care and industry was not very beneficiall, seeing my Master came at last to the notice that I was no man, but a woman, which was an occasion that the like evill thought sprung in him, as before in my servant. And as fortune gives not alwayes remedie for the difficulties which occurre, I found neither rocke nor downefall to coole and cure my Masters infirmitie, as I had done for my man: and therefore I accounted it a lesse inconvenience to depart thence, and hide my selfe againe among these desarts, then to adventure the triall of my strength or reason with him. Therefore, as I say, I turned to imboske my selfe, and search out some place, where, without any encumbrance I might intreat heaven with my sighes and teares, to have compassion on my mishap; and lend me industry and favour, eyther to issue fortunately out of it, or else to die amidst these solitudes, not leaving any memory of a wretch, who hath ministred matter, although not through her owne default, that men may speake and murmure of her, both in her owne and in other countries.

CHAPTER
I
Wherein is
discoursed
the new and
pleasant
adventure
that hapned
to the Curate
and Barber,
in Sierra
Morena.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER II

Which treats of the discretion of the beautifull Dorotea, and the artificiall manner used to disswade the amorous Knight from continuing his penance: and how hee was gotten away; with many other delightfull and pleasant occurrences.



HIS is, Sirs, the true relation of my Tragedie: see therefore now and judge, whether the sighes you heard, the words to which you listened, and the teares that gushed out at mine eyes, have not had sufficient occasion to appeare in greater abundance: and having considered the quality of my disgrace; you shall perceive all comfort to bee vaine, seeing the remedie thereof is impossible. Only I will request at your hands one favour which you ought and may easily grant, and is that you will addresse me unto some place, where I may live secure from the feare and suspition I have to be found by those which I know do daily travel in my pursuit: for although I am sure that my parents great affection towards me, doth warrant me to be kindly received and intartained by them: yet the shame is so great that possesseth me, only to thinke that I shall not returne to their presence in that state which they expect, as I account it farre better to banish my selfe from their sight for ever, then once to beholde their face, with the least suspition that they againe would behold mine divorced from that honestie which whilome my modest behaviour promised. Here she ended, and her face suddenly over-run by a lovely scarlet, perspicuously denoted the feeling and bashfulnesse of her soule.

The audients of her sad storie, felt great motions both
18

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

of pitie and admiration for her misfortunes: and although the Curate thought to comfort and counsell her forthwith, yet was he prevented by Cardenio, who taking her first by the hand, said at last; Ladie, thou art the beautifull Dorotea, daughter unto rich Cleonardo. Dorotea rested admired when she heard her fathers name, and saw of how little value he seemed, who had named him. For we have already recounted how raggedly Cardenio was clothed; and therefore she said unto him, And who art thou, friend, that knowest so well my fathers name; for until this houre (if I have not forgotten my selfe) I did not once name him throughout the whole Discourse of my unfortunate tale? I am (answered Cardenio) the unluckie Knight, whom Luscinda (as thou saidst) affirmed to be her husband. I am the disastrous Cardenio, whom the wicked proceeding of him that hath also brought thee to those termes wherein thou art, hath conducted me to the state in which I am, and thou mayest beholde ragged, naked, abandoned by al humane comfort: and what is worse, voyde of sense; seeing I onely enjoy it but at some few short times, and that, when heaven pleaseth to lend it me. I am hee, Dorotea, that was present at Don Fernando's unreasonable weddng, and that heard the consent which Luscinda gave him to be his wife. I was hee, that had not the courage to stay and see the end of her traunce, or what became of the paper found in her bosome. For my soule had not power or sufferance, to behold so many disventures at once, and therefore abandoned the place and my patience together, and onely left a Letter with mine Hoste, whom I intreated to deliver it into Luscinda her owne hands, and then came into these desarts, with resolution to end in them my miserable life, which since that houre I have hated as my most mortall enemie. But fortune hath not pleased to deprive me of it, thinking it sufficient to have impaired my wit, perhaps reserving me for the good successe befallne me now in finding of your selfe; for that being true (as I beleeve it is) which you have here discoursed, peradventure it may have reserved yet better hap for us both in our disasters then we doe expect.

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to disswade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautiful
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

For presupposing that Luscinda cannot marry with Don Fernando, because she is mine, nor Don Fernando with her because yours: and that she hath declared so manifestly the same: we may well hope that heaven hath meanes to restore to every one that which is his owne, seeing it yet consists in being not made away, or anihilated. And seeing this comfort remaines, not sprung from any very remote hope, nor founded on idle surmises, I request thee faire Ladie to take another resolution in thine honourable thought, seeing I meane to doe it in mine, and let us accommodate our selves to expect better successe. For I doe vow unto thee by the faith of a Gentleman and Christian, not to forsake thee, untill I see thee in Don Fernandes possession, and when I shall not by reasons be able to induce him to acknowledge how farre he rests indebted to thee, then will I use the liberty graunted to me as a Gentleman, and with just title challenge him to the fielde, in respect of the wrong he hath done unto thee; forgetting wholly mine owne injuries, whose revenge I will leave to heaven, that I may be able to right yours on earth.

Dorotea rested wonderfully admired having knowne and heard Cardenio, and ignoring what competent thankes she might returne him in satisfaction of his large offers, she cast her selfe downe at his feet to have kist them, which Cardenio would not permit: and the Licenciat answered for both, praising greatly Cardenios discourse: and chiefly intreated, prayed, and counselled them, that they would goe with him to his village, where they might fit themselves with such things as they wanted, and also take order how to search out Don Fernando, or carrie Dorotea to her fathers house, or doe else what they deemed most convenient. Cardenio and Dorotea gratified his courtesies, and accepted the favour hee proffered. The Barber also, who had stood all the while silent and suspended, made them a prettie Discourse, with as friendly an offer of himselfe, and his service as Master Curate; and likewise did briefly relate the occasion of their comming thither, with the extravagant kinde of madnesse which Don-Quixote had, and how they expected

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

now his Squires returne, whom they had sent to search for him. Cardenio having heard him named, remembred presently as in a dreame the conflict past betweene them both, and recounted it unto them, but could not in any wise call to minde the occasion thereof.

By this time they heard one call for them, and knew by the voyce, that it was Sancho Panças, who because hee found them not in the place where he had left them, cryed out for them as loudly as he might. They went to meeete him, and demaunding for Don-Quixote, he answered, that he found him all naked to his shirt, leane, yellow, almost dead for hunger, and sighing for his Lady Dulcinea: and although he had tolde him, how she commaunded him to repayre presently to Toboso, where she expected him: yet notwithstanding he answered that he was determined never to appeare before her beautie, untill he had done Feats that should make him worthy of her gracious favor. And then the Squire affirmed if that humor passed on any further, hee feared his Lord would be in danger never to become an Emperour as he was bound in honour, no nor a Cardinall, which was the least that could be expected of him. The Licenciat bid him be of good cheere, for they would bring him from thence whether he would or no; and recounted to Cardenio and Dorotea, what they had bethought for Don-Quixotes remedie, or at least for the carrying of him home to his house. To that Dorotea answered, that she would counterfeit the distressed Ladie better then the Barber; and chiefly seeing shee had apparell wherewithall to act it most naturally. And therefore desired them to leave to her charge the representing of all that which should bee needfull for the atchieving of their designe; for she had read many books of Knighthood, and knew well the stile that distressed damzels used, when they requested any favour of Knights adventurous. And then neede we nothing else, quoth the Curate, but onely to put our purpose presently in execution. For questionlesse good successe turnes on our side, seeing it hath so unexpectedly begun alreadie to open the gates of your remedy, and hath also facilitated for us that wherof we had most necessity in

CHAPTER

II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to disswade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

this exigent. Dorotea tooke forthwith out of her pillow-bearre a whole gowne of very rich stiffe, and a short mantle of another greene stiffe, and a collar and many other rich jewels out of a boxe, wherewithall she adorned her selfe in a trice so gorgeously, as shee seemed a very rich and goodly Ladie. All which and much more she had brought with her as she said from her house, to prevent what might happen, but never had any use of them, untill then. Her grace, gesture and beautie liked them all extremely, and made them account Don Fernando to be a man of little understanding, seeing he contemned such feature. But he which was most of all admired was Sancho Panca, because, as he thought (and it was so indeed) that he had not in all the dayes of his life before seene so faire a creature: and he requested the Curate very seriously to tell him who that beautifull Ladie was? and what she sought among those through-fares? This faire Lady, friend Sancho, answered the Curate, is (as if a man said nothing, she is so great) heire apparent by direct line of the mighty Kingdome of Micomicon, and comes in the search of your Lord, to demaund a boone of him, which is, that he will destroy and undoe a great wrong done unto her by a wicked Giant; and through the great fame which is spread over all Guinea of your Lords prowesse, this Princesse is come to finde him out. A happy searcher, and a fortunate finding, quoth Sancho, and chiefly, if my Master be so happie as to right that injurie, and redresse that wrong by killing that, O! the mighty lubber of a Giant whom you say: yes, he will kill him, I am very certaine, if he can once but meeke him, and if he be not a spirit; For my Master hath no kinde of power over spirits. But I must request one favour of you among others most earnestly, good Mr. Licenciat, and tis, that to the end my Lord may not take an humour of becomming a Cardinall (which is the thing I feare most in this world) that you will give him counsell to marry this Princesse presently, and by that meanes he shall remaine incapable of the dignitie of a Cardinall, and will come very easily by his Empyre, and I to the end of my desires: for I have thought well of the matter, and have found that it is

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

in no wise expedient that my Lord should become a Cardinall; for I am wholly unfit for any Ecclesiasticall dignitie, seeing I am a married man: and therefore to trouble my selfe now with seeking of dispensations to injoy Church-livings, having as I have both wife and children, were never to end: so that all my good consists, in that my Lord do marry this Princesse instantly, whose name yet I know not, and therfore I have not said it. She is hight (quoth the Curate) the Princesse Micomicona, for her Kingdome being called Micomicon, it is evident she must be termed so. That is questionlesse, quoth Sancho, for I have knowne many to take their denomination and surname from the place of their birth, calling themselves Peter of Alcala, Iohn of Ubeda, and Iames of Valedolid: and perhaps in Guinea Princes and Queenes use the same custome, and call themselves by the names of their Provinces.

So I thinke, quoth the Curate: and as touching your Masters marriage with her, I will labour therein as much as lies in my power. Wherewithall Sancho remained as well satisfied, as the Curate admired at his simplicitie, and to see how firmly he had fixed in his fantasie the very ravings of his Master, seeing he did beleeve without doubt that his Lord should become an Emperour. Dorotea in this space had gotten upon the Curates Mule, and the Barber had somewhat better fitted the beard which he made of the Oxes tayle on his face, and did after intreat Sancho to guide them to the place where Don-Quixote was, and advertised him withall, that he should in no wise take any notice of the Curate or Barber, or confesse in any sort that he knew them, for therein consisted all the meanes of bringing Don-Quixote to the minde to become an Emperour. Yet Cardenio would not goe with them, fearing lest thereby Don-Quixote might call to minde their contention: and the Curate thinking also that his presence was not expedient, remained with him, letting the others goe before, and these followed a farre off faire and softly on foot, and ere they departed, the Curate instructed Dorotea a new, what she should say, who bid him to feare nothing, for she would

CHAPTER
II
Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

discharge her part to his satisfaction, and as booke of Chivalrie required and laid downe.

They travelled about three quarters of a league, as they espied the Knight, and at last they discovered him among a number of intricate rocks, all apparelled but not armed: and as soone as Dorotea beheld him, she strucke her Palfray, her well bearded Barber following her: and as they approached Don-Quixote, the Barber leaped lightly down from his Mule, and ranne towards Dorotea to take her downe betweene his armes, who alighting, went with a very good grace towards Don-Quixote, and kneeled before him. And although hee strived to make her arise, yet she remaining still on her knees, spake to him in this manner: I will not arise from hence thrice valourous and approoved Knight, untill your bountie and courtesie shall grant unto me one boone, which shall much redound unto your honour and prize of your person, and to the profit of the most disconsolate and wronged Damzell that the Sunne hath ever seene. And if it be so, that the valour of your invincible arme be correspondent to the bruite of your immortall fame, you are obliged to succour this comfortlesse Wight, that comes from lands so remote, to the sound of your famous name, searching you for to remedie her mishaps. I will not answer you a word, faire Lady, quoth Don-Quixote, nor heare a jot of your affaire, untill you arise from the ground. I will not get up from hence, my Lord, quoth the afflicted Ladie, if first of your wonted bountie you doe not grant to my request. I doe give and grant it, said Don-Quixote, so that it be not a thing that may turne to the dammage or hinderance of my King, my countrey, or of her that keepes the key of my heart and liberty. It shall not turne to the dammage or hinderance of those you have said, good Sir, replied the dolorous Damzell; and as she was saying this, Sancho Pança rounded his Lord in the eare, saying softly to him; Sir, you may very well grant the request she asketh, for it is a matter of nothing, it is onely to kill a monstrous Giant, and shee that demands it is the mightie Princesse Micomicona Queene of the great Kingdome of Micomicon in Ethiopia. Let her be what she will, quoth

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Don-Quixote, for I will accomplish what I am bound, and my conscience shal informe me conformable to the state I have professed: and then turning to the Damsell, he said, Let your great beautie arise, for I grant to you any boone which you shall please to aske of me. Why then quoth the Damsell that which I demand is, that your magnanimous person come presently away with mee, to the place where I shall carry you, and doe likewise make me a promise, not to undertake any other adventure or demaund untill you revenge me upon a traytour who hath, against all lawes both divine and humane, usurped my kingdome. I say that I grant you all that quoth Don-Quixote, and therefore Ladie you may cast away from this day forward all the melancholy that troubles you, and labour that your languishing and dismaied hopes may recover againe new strength and courage, for by the helpe of God, and that of mine arme you shall see your selfe shortly restored to your kingdome, and enthronized in the chayre of your ancient and great estate, in despite and maugre the traytors that shall dare gainesay it: and therefore Hands to the worke, for they say, that danger alwayes followes delay. The distressed Damsell strove with much ado to kisse his hand: but Don-Quixote, who was a most accomplished Knight for courtesie, would never condescend thereunto, but making her arise, he imbraced her with great kindenesse and respect; and commaunded Sancho to saddle Rozinante, and helpe him to arme himselfe. Sancho tooke downe the armes forthwith, which hung on a tree like trophies, and searching the guirts armed his Lord in a moment, who seeing himselfe armed said, Let us in Gods name depart from hence to assist this great Lady. The barber kneeled all this while, and could with much adoe dissemble his laughter, or keepe on his beard that threatned still to fall off; with whose fall perhaps, they should all have remained without bringing their good purpose to passe: and seeing that the boone was granted, and noted the diligence wherewithall Don-Quixote made himselfe ready to depart and accomplish the same: hee arose and tooke his Ladie by the hand, and both of them together holpe her upon her Mule: and presently after,

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to diawade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

Don-Quixote leaped on Rozinante, and the Barber got up on his beast, Sancho onely remayning a foote: where hee a fresh renued the memory of the losse of his gray Asse, with the want procured to him thereby. But all this he bore with very great patience, because he supposed that his Lord was now in the way, and next degree to be an Emperour: for he made an infallible account that he would marry that Princesse, and at least be King of Micomicon: but yet it grieved him to thinke how that Kingdome was in the countrey of blacke Moores, and that therefore the Nation which should be given to him for his vassals, should be all blacke: for which difficultie his imagination coyned presently a good remedie: and he discoursed with himselfe in this manner: Why should I care, though my subjects be all blacke Moores, is there any more to be done, then to loade them in a ship, and bring them into Spaine, where I may sell them, and receive the price of them in readie money? And with that money may I buy some title or Office, wherein I may after live at mine ease all the daies of my life? No! but sleepe, and have no wit, nor abilitie to dispose of things, and to sell thirtie or ten thousand vassailes in the space that one would say, give me those strawes. I will dispatch them all, they shall flie the little with the great, or as I can best contrive the matter. And be they ever so blacke, I will transforme them into white or yellow ones; come neere and see whether I cannot sucke well my fingers ends: And thus he travailed so sollicitous and glad, as he quite forgot his paine of travailing a foote. Cardenio and the Curate stood in the meane time beholding all that passed from behind some brambles, where they lay lurking, and where in doubt what meanes to use to issue and joyne in company with them. But the Curate who was an ingenious and prompt plotter, devised instantly what was to bee done, that they might attaine their desire, thus he tooke out of his case a payre of sheares, and cut off Cardenioes beard therewithall in a trice, and then gave unto him to weare a riding Capouch which he himselfe had on, and a blacke cloake; and himselfe walked in a dublet and hose. Cardenio thus attired looked so unlike that he was before, as he would not have knowne

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

himselfe in a looking glasse. This being finished, and the others gone on before whilst they disguised themselves, they sallied out with facility to the high way before Don-Quixote or his company, for the rocks and many other bad passages did not permit those that were a horsebacke, to make so speedie an end of their journey as they: and when they had thorowly past the mountaine, they expected at the foot thereof for the Knight and his companie: and when the Knight appeared, the Curate looked on him very earnestly for a great space, with inkling that he beganne to know him: and after he had a good while beheld him, he ranne towards him with his armes spread abroad, saying, In a good houre be the mirrour of all Knighthood found and my noble country-man Don-Quixote of the Mancha, the flower and the creame of Gentilitie, the shaddow and remedie of the afflicted and the Quintessence of Knights Errant: and saying this he held Don-Quixote his left thigh embraced. Who, admiring at that which he heard that man to say and do, did also review him with attention, and finally knew him, and all amazed to see him, made much ado to alight, but the Curate would not permit him: wherefore Don-Quixote said, good Master Licenciat permit me to alight, for it is in no sort decent that I be a horsebacke, and so reverend a person as you goe on foot. I will never consent thereunto, quoth the Curate, your highnes must needs stay on horsebacke, seeing that thereon you are accustomed to atchieve the greatest feats of Chivalrie and adventures, which were ever seene in our age. For it shall suffice me, who am an unworthy Priest, to get up behinde some one of these other Gentlemen that ride in your company, if they will not take it in bad part, yea, and I will make account that I ride on Pegasus, or the

* Zebra of the famous Moore Muzaraque, who lies yet in-chanted in the steepe rocke Culema, neere unto Alcala of Henares. Truely I did not thinke upon it good Master Licenciat, answered Don-Quixote, yet I presume that my Lady the Princesse will be well appaide for my sake to commaund her Squire to lend you the use of his saddle, and to get up himselfe on the Croper, if so it

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to disswade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

*A strange
beast of
Africke that
travels very
swiftly.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance :
and how hee
was gotten
away ; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

be that the beast will beare double. Yes that it will, said the Princessse, for ought I know, and likewise I am sure it will not be necessary to commaund my Squire to alight, for he is of himselfe so courteous and courtly, as he will in no wise condiscend that an Ecclesiasticall man should go a foote, when he may helpe him to a horse. That is most certaine, quoth the Barber ; and saying so he alighted, and intreated the Curate to take the saddle ; to which courtesie he did easily condescend. But by evill fortune, as the Barber thought to leape up behind him : the Mule which was in effect a hired one (and that is sufficient to say it was unhappy) did lift a little her hinder quarters, and bestowed two or three flings on the ayre, which, had they hit on Master Nicholas his brest or pate, he would have bequeathed the quest of Don-Quixote upon the Divill : but notwithstanding the Barber was so affrighted, as he fell on the ground with so little heed of his beard, as it fell quite off, and lay spread upon the ground : and perceiving himselfe without it, he had no other shift, but to cover his face with both his handes, and complaine that all his cheeke-teeth were strucken out. Don-Quixote beholding such a great sheafe of a beard falle away, without jaw or bloud from the face, he said, I vow, this is one of the greatest miracles that ever I saw in my life ; it hath taken and plukt away his beard, as smoothly as if it were done of purpose. The Curate beholding the danger wherein their invention was like to incurre if it were detected, went forthwith, and taking up the beard, came to Master Nicholas that lay still a playing, and with one push bringing his head towards his owne brest, he set it on againe, murmuring the while over him certaine words, which he said were a certaine prayer, appropriated to the setting on of falne beards, as they should soone perceive : And so having set it on handsomly, the Squire remained as well bearded and whole as ever he was in his life : whereat Don-Quixote rested marvellously admired, and requested the Curate to teach him that prayer when they were at leisure. For he supposed that the vertue thereof extended it selfe farther then to the fastning on of beards ; since it was manifest that the place

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

whence the beard was borne, must have remained without flesh, wounded and ill-dight; and seeing it cured all, it must of force serve for more then the beard. It is true, replied Master Curate; and then promised to instruct him with the secret, with the first oportunity that was presented.

Then they agreed that the Curate should ride first on the Mule, and after him the other two, each one by turnes untill they arrived to the Inne, which was about some two leagues thence. Three being thus mounted, to wit, Don-Quixote, the Princesse and Curate, and the other three on foote, Cardenio, the Barber, and Sancho Pança. Don-Quixote said to the damzell, Madam, let me intreat your highnesse to leade me the way that most pleasest you. And before she could answeare, the Licenciat said, Towards what Kingdome would you travell? Is it by fortune towards that of Micomicon? I suppose, it should be thitherwards, or else I know but little of Kingdomes. She, who knew very well the Curates meaning, and was her selfe no babe, answered, saying; Yes Sir, my way lies towards that Kingdome. If it be so, quoth the Curate, you must passe thorow the village where I dwell, and from thence direct your course towards Cartagena, where you may luckily embarke your selves. And if you have a prosperous winde, and a quiet and calme Sea, you may come within the space of nine yeares to the sight of the Lake Meona, I meane Meolidas, which stands on this side of your Highnesse Kingdome some hundred dayes journey or more. I take you to be deceived good Sir, quoth shee; for it is not yet fully two yeares since I departed from thence; and truely I never almost had any faire weather, and yet notwithstanding I have arrived, and come to see that which I so much longed for, to wit, the presence of the worthy Don-Quixote of the Mancha, whose renowne came to my notice as soone as I touched the earth of Spaine with my foote, and moved me to search for him, to commend my selfe to his courtesie, and commit the justice of my cause to the valour of his invincible arme. No more, quoth Don-Quixote, I cannot abide to heare my selfe praysed. For I am a sworne

CHAPTER II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, and
the artificiall
manner used
to disswade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

II

Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotes, and
the artificiall
manner used
to dissuade
the amorous
Knight from
continuing
his penance:
and how hee
was gotten
away; with
many other
delightfull
and pleasant
occurrences.

enemy of all adulmentation. And although this be not such, yet notwithstanding the like discourses do offend my chaste eares. What I can say to you, faire Princesse is, that whether I have valour or not; that which I have or have not, shalbe imploied in your service, even to the very losse of my life. And so omitting that til his time, let me intreat good Master Licenciat, to tell me the occasion which hath brought him heere to these quarters so alone, without attendants, and so slightly attired, as it strikes me in no little admiration? To this I will answere with brevity, quoth the Curate: You shall understand that Master Nicolas the Barber, our very good friend, and my selfe, travelled towards Sivill, to recover certaine summes of money, which a kinseman of mine, who dwells this many yeeres in the Indias hath sent unto me. The summe is not a little one, for it surmounted seventy thousand Rials of eight, all of good waight: see if it was not a rich gift. And passing yesterday through this way, we were set upon by foure robbers, which dispoiled us of all, even to our very beardes, and that in such sort, as the Barber was forced to set on a counterfeit one: and this yong man that goeth here with us (meaning Cardenio) was transformed by them anew. And the best of it is, that it is publikely bruited about all this Commarke, that those which surprized us, were Galley-slaves, who were set at liberty, as it is reported, much about this same place, by so valiant a Knight, as in despite of the Commissarie and the guard he freed them all. And questionlesse hee either was wood, or else as great a knave as themselves, or some one that wanted both soule and conscience, seeing he let slip the Wolves amidst the Sheepe, the Foxe among the Hennes, and Flies hard by Honie, and did frustrate justice, rebell against his naturall Lord and King, for he did so by oppugning his just commandements, and hath deprived the Gallies of their feete, and set all the Holy brotherhood in an uprore, which hath reposèd these many yeares past. And finally, would doe an act, by which he should lose his soule, and yet not gaine his bodie. Sancho had rehearsed to the Curate and Barber the adventure of the slaves, which his Lord had accomplished with

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

such glorie ; and therefore the Curate did use this vehemensie
as he repeated it, to see what Don-Quixote would say or
doe, whose colour changed at every word, and durst not
confesse that he was himselfe, and the deliverer of that good
people : and these, quoth the Curate, were they that have
robbed us: and God of his infinite mercy pardon him
who hindered their going to receive the punish-
ment they had so well deserved.

CHAPTER
II
Which treates
of the dis-
cretion of the
beautifull
Dorotea, etc.

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene
Don-Quixote, and those of his companie,
after he had abandoned the rigorous
place of his penance.



CARCE had the Curate finished his speech
throughly, when Sancho said: By my
faith, Master Licenciat, he that did that
feate, was my Lord, and that not for want
of warning, for I told him before hand,
and advised him, that he should see well
what he did, and that it was a sinne to
deliver them, because they were all sent
to the Gallies for very great villanies they had played.
You bottlehead, replied Don-Quixote, hearing him speake,
it concerneth not Knights Errant to examine whether the
afflicted, inchained, and oppressed, which they encounter
by the way, be carried in that fashion, or are plunged
in that distresse, through their owne default or dis-
grace; but onely are obliged to assist them as needie
and oppressed, setting their eyes upon their paines, and
not on their crimes. I met with a Rosarie or beades of
inserted people, sorrowfull and unfortunate, and I did for
them that which my religion exacts, as for the rest, let

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

them verifie it elsewhere: and to whosoever else the holy dignitie and honourable person of Master Licenciat excepted, it shall seeme evill: I say hee knowes but slightly what belongs to Chivalrie; and hee lies like a whoreson and a villaine borne: and this will I make him know with the broad side of my sword. These words he said, settling himselfe in his stirrups, and addressing his Morion (for the Barbers bason, which he accounted to be Mambrino his Helmet, he carried hanging at the pomell of his saddle, untill he might have it repaired of the crazings the Galley-slave had wrought in it.) Dorotea who was very discrete and pleasant, and that was by this well acquainted with Don-Quixotes faultie humour, and saw all the rest make a jest of him, Sancho Pança excepted, would also shew her conceit to bee as good as some others, and therefore said unto him, Sir Knight, remember your selfe of the boone you have promised unto mee, whereunto conforming your selfe, you cannot intermeddle in any other adventure, be it ever so urgent. Therefore asswage your stomacke, for if Master Licenciat had known that the gallislaves were delivered by your invincible arme, he would rather have given unto himselfe three blowes on the mouth, and also bit his tongue thrice then have spoken any word whence might result your indignation. That I dare sweare, quoth the Curate, yea and besides torne away one of my Mustachioes. Madame said Don-Quixote, I will hold my peace, and suppresse the just choler already inkindled in my breast, and will ride quietly and peaceably, until I have accomplished the thing I have promised: and I request you in recompence of this my good desire, if it be not displeasing to you, to tell mee your grievance, and how many, which, and what the persons be, of whom I must take due, sufficient, and entyre revenge? I will promptly performe your will herein answered Dorotea, if it will not bee irkesome to you to listen to disasters. In no sort good Madam, said Don-Quixote: to which Dorotea, answered thus, be then attentive to my relation. Scarce had she said so, when Cardenio and the Barber came by her side, desirous to heare how the discrete Dorotea would faine her tale: and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the same did Sancho, which was as much deceived in her person as his Lord Don-Quixote and she, after dressing her selfe well in the saddle, bethought and provided her selfe whilst she coughed and used other gestures, and then began to speake in this manner.

First of all good Sirs I would have you note that I am called: and heere she stood suspended a while, by reason she had forgotten the name that the Curate had given unto her; but he presently occurd to her succour, understanding the cause, and said. It is no wonder great Ladie that you be troubled and stagger, whilst you recount your misfortunes, seeing it is their ordinarie custome of disasters to deprive those whom they torment and distract their memorie in such sort, as they cannot remember themselves, even of their owne very names; as now it proves done in your Highnesse, which forgets it selfe, that you are called the Princesse Micomicon lawfull inheritrix of the great Kingdome of Micomicon: and with this note, you may easily reduce into your dolefull memory, all that which you shall please to rehearse. It is very true (quoth the Damsell) and from henceforth I thinke it will not be needfull to prompt me any more; for I will arrive into a safe port, with the narration of my authenticke Historie: which is, that my father, who was called The wise Tinacrio, was very expert in that which is called Art Magick, and he knew by his science, that my Mother, who was called Queenc Xaramilla should die before he deceased, and that he should also passe from this life within a while after, and leave me an Orphane, but he was woont to say, how that did not afflict his mind so much, as that he was very certaine that a huge Giant, Lord of a great Iland neere unto my Kingdome, called Pandafilando, of the duskie sight: because, although his eyes stand in their right places, yet doe they still looke a squint, which he doth to terrifie the beholders. I say that my father knew, that this Giant when he should heare of his death, would passe with a maine power into my land, and deprive me therof, not leaving me the lest village, wherein I might hide my head. Yet might all this be

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene
Don-Quixote,
and those of
his companie,
after he had
abandoned
the rigorous
place of his
penance.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

excused, if I would marry with him, but as he found out by his science, he knew I would never condiscend thereunto, or incline mine affection to so unequall a marriage: and herein he said nothing but truth, for it never past once my thought, to espouse that Giant, nor with any other, were he ever so unreasonable, great and mightie: my father likewise added then, that after his death, I should see Landafilando usurpe my Kingdome, and that I should in no wise stand to my defence, for that would prove my destruction; but leaving to him the kingdome freely without troubles, if I meant to excuse mine owne death, and the totall ruine of my good and loyall subjects, for it would be impossible to defend my selfe from the divellish force of the giant; I should presently direct my course towards Spayne, where I should find a redresse of my harmes, by incountring with a Knight Errant, whose fame should extend it selfe much about that time throughout that kingdome, and his name should be if I forget not my selfe, Don Açote or Don Gigote. Ladie, you would say Don-Quixote quoth Sancho Pança, or as hee is called by another name, the Knight of the ilfavoured face. You have reason replied Dorotea: he said moreover, that he should bee high of stature, have a withered face, and that on the right side, a little under the left shoulder, or thereabouts, he should have a tawny spot with certaine haires like to bristles. Don-Quixote hearing this said to his Squire, hold my horse heere, sonne Sancho; and helpe me to take off mine apparrell, for I will see whether I be the Knight, of whom the wise king hath prophesied. Why would you now put off your cloaths? quoth Dorotea. To see whether I have that spot which your father mentioned, answered Don-Quixote: You need not undoe your apparrell for that purpose said Sancho, for I know alreadie that you have a spot with the tokens she named on the very ridges of your backe, and argues you to bee a very strong man. That is sufficient quoth Dorotea: for wee must not looke too neere, or be over curious in our friends affaires, and whether it be on the shoulder, or ridge of the backe it imports but little: for the substance

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

consists onely in having such a marke, and that wheresoever it shall be ; seeing all is one, and the selfe-same flesh : and doubtlesly my good father did ayme well at all, and I likewise in commanding my selfe to Don-Quixote : for surely he is the man of whom my father spoke, seeing the signes of his face agree with those of the great renowne that is spread abroad of this Knight, not onely in Spayne, but also in \AA ethiopia : for I had no sooner landed in Osuna, when I heard so many of his prowesses recounted, as my minde gave me presently, that hee was the man in whose search I travailed. But how did you land in Osuna good Madam quoth Don-Quixote, seeing it is no Sea-towne ? Marrie sir quoth the Curate, anticipating Dorotea's answere, the Princesse would say that after she had landed in Malaga, the first place wherein she heard tidings of you, was at Osuna. So I would have said quoth Dorotea. And it may be very wel quoth the Curate, and I desire your Majestie to continue your discourse : there needs no farther continuation quoth Dorotea, but that finally my Fortune hath beene so favourable in finding of Don-Quixote, as I doe alreadie hold and account my selfe for Queene and Ladie of all mine estate, seeing that hee of his wonted bountie and magnificence hath promised mee the boone to accompany me wheresoever I shall guide him, which shall be to none other place then to set him before Pandafilando of the duskie sight, to the end you may sley him, and restore mee to that which hee hath so wrongfully usurped : for all will succeed in the twinkling of an eye, as the wise Tinacrio my good father hath already foretold : who said moreover, and also left it written in Chaldaicall or Greeke characters, (for I cannot read them,) that if the Knight of the Prophecye, after having beheaded the Giant, would take me to wife, that I should in no sort refuse him, but instantly admitting him for my Spouse, make him at once possessor of my selfe and my Kingdome.

What thinkest thou of this friend Sancho ? quoth Don-Quixote then, when he heard her say so : how likest this point ? did not I tell thee thus much before ? see now, whether we have not a kingdome to commaund, and a

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

Queene whom wee may marry? I sweare as much quoth Sancho, a poxe on the knave that will not marry as soone as Master Pandahilado his windepipes are cut. Mount then and see whether the Queene bee ill or no: I would to God all the fleas of my bed were turned to be such. And saying so, he gave two or three friskles in the ayre, with very great signes of contentment, and presently went to Dorotea, and taking her Mule by the bridle he withheld it, and laying himselfe downe on his knees before her requested her very submissively to give him her hands to kisse them, in signe that hee received her for his Queene and Ladie. Which of the beholders could abstaine from laughter, perceiving the masters madnesse, and the servants simplicity? To be briefe, Dorotea must needes give them unto him, and promised to make him a great Lord in her Kingdome, when heaven became so propitious to her, as to let her once recover and possesse it peaceable. And Sancho returned her thankes, with such words as made them all laugh a new.

This is my Historie noble Sirs, quoth Dorotea, whereof onely restes untold, that none of all the traine which I brought out of my Kingdome to attend on me, is now extant, but this well bearded Squire; for all of them were drowned in a great storme that overtooke us in the very sight of the Harborough, whence hee and I escaped, and came to land by the helpe of two plankes, on which we laid hold, almost by miracle; as also the whole discourse and mysterie of my life seemes none other then a miracle, as you might have noted: And if in any part of the relation I have exceeded, or not observed a due decorum, you must impute it to that which Master Lecenciat said to the first of my History, that continuall paines and afflictions of mind deprives them that suffer the like of their memory. That shall not hinder mee (O high and valorous Ladie) quoth Don-Quixote, from enduring as many as I shall suffer in your service be they ever so great or difficult. And therefore I doe anew ratifie and confirme the promise I have made, and doe sweare to goe with you to the end of the world untill I find out your fierce enemy, whose proud

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

head I meane to slice off by the helpe of God, and my valorous arme, with the edge of this (I will not say a good) sword: thankes be to Gines of Passamonte, which tooke away mine owne: this he said murmuring to himselfe, and then prosecuted saying: and after I have cut it off, and left you peaceably in the possession of your state, it shal rest in your owne will to dispose of your person as you like best. For as long as I shall have my memory possessed, and my will captived, and my understanding yeelded to her, I will say no more, it is not possible that ever I may induce my selfe to marry any other, although shee were a Phoenix.

That which Don-Quixote had said last of all, of not marrying, disliked Sancho so much, as lifting his voyce with great anger, he said, I vow and sweare by my selfe, that you are not in your right wits, Sir Don-Quixote: for how is it possible, that you can call the matter of contracting so high a Princesse as this is in doubt? do you think that Fortune will offer you at every corners end the like happe of this which is now proffered? Is my Ladie Dulcinea perhaps more beautifull? No certaintely, nor halfe so faire, nay I am rather about to say, that she comes not to her shoo that is heere present. In an ill howre shall I arrive to possesse that unfortunate Earldome which I expect, if you goe thus seeking for Mushrubs in the bottome of the Sea: Marry, marry your selfe presently; the divell take you for me, and take that Kingdome comes into your hands, and being a King make me presently a Marquesse, or Admirall, and instantly after let the divell take all if he pleaseth. Don-Quixote, who heard such blasphemies spoken against his Ladie Dulcinea, could not beare them any longer: and therefore lifting up his Iaveline without speaking any word to Sancho, gave him therewithall too such blowes as hee overthrew him to the earth: and had not Dorotea cried to him, to hold his hand, he had doubtlesly slaine him in the place. Thinkest thou (quoth he after a while) base peasant, that I shall have alwaies leasure and disposition to thrust my hand into my pouch, and that there be nothing else but thou still erring, and I pardoning; and doest not thou think

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

of it (excommunicated rascall) for certainely thou art excommunicated, seeing thou hast talked so broadly of the peerelesse Dulcinea, and doest not thou know, base slave, Vagabond, that if it were not for the valour shee infuseth into mine arme, that I should not have sufficient forces to kill a flea, Say, scoffer with the vipers tongue, who dost thou thinke hath gained this kingdome, and cut the head of this Giant, and made thee a Marquesse ? (For I give all this for done alreadie, and for a matter ended and judged) but the worthes and valour of Dulcinea : using mine arme as the instrument of her act. She fights under my person, and overcomes in mee : And I live and breathe in her, and from her I hold my life and being. O whoreson villaine, how ungratefull art thou, that seest thy selfe exalted out from the dust of the earth to be a Nobleman, and yet dost repay so great a benefit, with detracting the person that bestowed it on thee.

Sancho was not so sore hurt, but that he could heare all his Masters reasons very well : wherefore arising somewhat hastily, hee ranne behinde Dorotea her Palfray, and from thence said to his Lord : Tell me Sir if you bee not determined to marry with this Princesse, it is most cleere that the Kingdome shall not be yours : and if it bee not, what favours can you bee able to doe to me ? It is of this that I complaine me, marrie your selfe one for one with this Princesse, now that we have her here, as it were rained to us downe from heaven, and you may after turne to my Ladie Dulcinea, for I thinke there bee Kings in the world, that keepe Lemmons. As for beauty, I will not intermeddle ; for if I must say the truth, each of both is very faire, although I have never seene the Ladie Dulcinea. How, hast not thou seene her, blasphemous traytor ? quoth Don-Quixote, if thou didst but even now bring mee a message from her ? I say, quoth Sancho, I have not seene her so leisurely, as I might particularly note her beautie and good partes one by one, but yet in a clap as I saw them, they liked me very well. I doe excuse thee now, said Don-Quixote, and pardon me the displeasure which I have given unto thee, for the first motions are not in our handes. I see

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that well, quoth Sancho, and that is the reason why talke is in me of one of those first motions. And I cannot omit to speake once at least, that which comes to my tongue. For all that Sancho, replied Don-Quixote, see well what thou speakest, for the earthen pitcher goes so oft to the water, I will say no more.

Well then answered Sancho, God is in heaven, who seeth all these guiles, and shall be one day judge of him that sinnes most, of mee in not speaking well, or of you by not doing well. Let there be no more, quoth Dorotea ; but run, Sancho, and kisse your Lords hand, and aske him for-givenesse, and from henceforth take more heede how you praise or dispraise any body, and speake no ill of that Ladie Toboso, whom I doe not know otherwise then to doe her service : and have confidence in God, for thou shalt not want a Lordship wherein thou mayest live like a King. Sancho went with his head hanging downward, and demaunded his Lords hand, which he gave unto him with a grave countenance, and after hee had kissed it, he gave him his blessing, and said to him, that hee had somewhat to say unto him, and therefore bade him to come somewhat forward that he might speake unto him. Sancho obeyed, and both of them going a little a side, Don-Quixote said unto him, I have not had leisure after thy comming to demaund of thee in particular concerning the Embassage that thou carriest, and the awnser that thou broughtest backe ; and therefore now Fortune lends us some oportunitie and leisure, doe not denie mee the happinesse which thou mayest give me by thy good newes. Demaund what you please, quoth Sancho, and I will awnser you, and I request you good my Lord, that you bee not from henceforth so wrathfull. Why doest thou say so, Sancho ? quoth Don-Quixote. I say it, replied Sancho, because that these blowes which thou bestowed now, were rather given in revenge of the dissention which the Divell stirred betweene us two the other night, then for any thing I said against my Lady Dulcinea, whom I doe honour and reverence as a relike, although she be none, onely because she is yours. I pray thee good Sancho, said Don-Quixote,

CHAPTER
III
Of many
pleasant dis-
courses passed
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and those of
his companie,
after he had
abandoned
the rigorous
place of his
penance.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.

fal not againe into those discourses, for they offend me. I did pardon thee then, and thou knowest that a new offence must have a new penance.

As they talked thus, they espied a gallant, comming towards them, riding on an Asse, and when he drewe neere he seemed to be an *AEgyptian*: but Sancho Pança, who whensoever hee met any Asses, followed them with his eyes and his heart, as one that thought still on his owne, had scarce eyed him when hee knew that it was Gines of Passamonte, and by the looke of the *AEgyptian*, found out the fleece of his Asse, as in truth it was; for Gines came riding on his gray Asse; who to the end that hee might not bee knowne, and also have commodity to sell his beast, attired himselfe like an Egyptian, whose language and many others he could speake as well as if they were his mother tongue. Sancho saw him and knew him: and scarce had hee seene and taken notice of him, when he cryed out aloude, Ah thieve, Ginesillo, leave my goods behinde thee, set my life loose, and doe not intermeddle with my ease. Leave mine Asse, leave my comfort; flic, villaine, absent thy selfe, thieve, and abandon that which is none of thine. He needed not to have used so many words and frumps, for Gines leaped downe at the very first, and beginning a trot that seemed rather to be a gallop, he absented himselfe and fled farre enough from them in a moment. Sancho went then to his Asse, and imbracing him, said, How hast thou done hitherto, my darling and treasure, gray Asse of mine eyes, and my dearest companion? and with that stroked and kissed him as if it were a reasonable creature. The Asse held his peace, and permitted Sancho to kisse and cherish him, without answering a word. All the rest arrived, and congratulated with Sancho for the finding of his Asse, but chiefly Don-Quixote, who said unto him, that notwithstanding that he found his Asse, yet would not he therefore annull his warrant for the three Colts; for which Sancho returned him very great thankes.

Whilst they two travelled together discoursing thus, the Curate said to Dorotea, that she had very discreetly discharged her selfe, as well in the Historie, as in her brevitie

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and imitation thereof, to the phrase and conceits of books of Knighthood : she answered that she did oftentimes reade books of that subject, but that she knew not where the Provinces lay, nor Sea ports ; and therefore did onely say at randome, that she had landed in Osuna. I knew it was so, quoth the Curate, and therefore I said what you heard, wherewithall the matter was souldered. But is it not a marvellous thing to see with what facility the unfortunate Gentleman beleeves all these inventions and lies, onely because they beare the stile and manner of the follies laid downe in his booke? It is, quoth Cardenio, and that so rare and beyond all conceit, as I beleeve, if the like were to be invented, scarce could the sharpest wits devise such another. There is yet, quoth the Curate, as marvellous a matter as that : for leaving apart the simplicities which this good Gentleman speakes concerning his frensie, if you will commune with him of any other subject whatsoever he will discourse on it with an excellent methode, and shew himselfe to have a cleere and pleasing understanding. So that, if he be not touched by matters of Chivalry, there is no man but will deeme him to be of a sound and excellent judgement.

Don-Quixote on the other side prosecuted his conversing with his Squire, whilst the others talked together ; and said to Sancho : Let us two, friend Pança forget old injuries, and say unto mee now, without any rancour or anger, where, how, and when didst thou finde my Ladie Dulcinea? What did she when thou camest? What saidst thou to her? What answered shee? What countenance shewed shee as shee read my Letter? And who writ it out fairely for thee? And every other thing that thou shalt thinke worthy of notice in this affaire, to be demanded or answered, without either addition or lying, or soothing adulation : and on the other side doe not abbreviate it, lest thou shoudest defraude mee thereby of expected delight. Sir, answered Sancho, if I must say the truth, none copied out the Letter for me, for I caried no Letter at all. Thou sayest true, quoth Don-Quixote : for I found the Tablets wherein it was written, with my selfe, two dayes after

CHAPTER
III
Of many
pleasant dis-
courses passed
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and those of
his companie,
after he had
abandoned
the rigorous
place of his
penance.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote, and those of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his venance.

thy departure, which did grieve me exceedingly, because I knew not what thou wouldest do, when thou didst perceive the want of the Letter, and I alwaies made full account, that thou wouldest returne againe from the place where thou shouldest first misse it. I had done so, quoth Sancho, if I had not borne it away in memory, when you read it to mee, in such sort, as I said it to a Clerke of a Vestrie, who did copie it out of my understanding so point by point, as he said that he never in all the dayes of his life, although he had read many a Letter of excommunication, read or seene so fine a Letter as it was. And dost thou hold it yet in memory, Sancho? quoth Don-Quixote. No, Sir, said Sancho, for after I gave it, seeing it served for none other purpose, I did willingly forget it. And if I remember any thing, it is that of the mouldy, I would say 'Soveraigne Ladie,' and the end, 'Yours untill death, The Knight of the illfavoured face,' and I put betweene these two things in the Letter three hundred 'soules,' and 'lives,' and 'sweet eyes.'

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER IIII

Of the pleasant discourses continued betweene
Don-Quixote, and his Squire Sancho Pança,
with other adventures.



LL this liketh me well, said Don-Quixote, therefore say on, thou arrivedst, and what was that Queene of Beauty doing then? I dare say that thou foundest her three ding of Pearls, or imbroidering some curious device, with Venice golde for me her captive Knight? No that I did not, quoth Sancho, but winnowing two bushels of Wheate in the yard of her house. Why then, said Don-Quixote, thou mayest make account that each corne of that Wheate was a graine of Pearle, seeing they were touched by her delicate hand. And friend, didst thou note well what the Wheate was, whether of the best or ordinarie? It was not but redde, said Sancho. Well then I assure thee, answered Don-Quixote, that being sifted by her hands, it must needs make very faire bread and white. But passe forward, when thou didst deliver my Letter, did she kisse it? Did she set it on her head? Did she use any ceremony worthy of such a Letter? Or what did she? When I went to give it unto her, said Sancho, she was holding up of her armes with a good quantity of Wheate that she had in her Sive, and therfore said unto me, friend, lay downe that Letter there on the sack, for I cannot read it untill I have winnowed all that is here. O discrete Ladie, quoth Don-Quixote, she surely did that, because she might read it at leisure, and recreate her selfe therewithall. Forward, Sancho and as long as shee was thus busied, what discourses passed she with thee? What did she demaund of thee concerning me? And thou, what didst thou answere? Say all good Sancho, say all, recount

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

to me every particularity, and let not the least immunitie remaine in the Inke-horne. She demaunded nothing of me, quoth Sancho: but I recounted unto her the state I had left you in for her sake, doing of penance, all naked from the gyrdle upward among these rockes like a bruit beast, sleeping on the ground, and eating your bread without Table-clothes, and that you never combed your beard, but was weeping and cursing your fortune. There thou saidst ill (quoth Don-Quixote) for I doe not curse my fortune, but rather blisse it, and will blisse it as long as I shall live, seeing it hath made me worthy to merite the love of so high a Lady as Dulcinea of Toboso. She is in good faith so high, answered Sancho, as she surpasseth me almost by a whole cubite. Why how now, Sancho, said the Knight, hast thou measured thy selfe with her? I did measure my selfe with her in this manner, replied Sancho, that comming over to helpe her to lift up a sacke of Wheat on an Asse, we joyned so neere, as I well perceived that she was more then a great spanne higher then my selfe. That is true, quoth Don-Quixote: but thinkest thou not that the talnesse of her extended stature is adorned with a thousand millions of graces and indowments of the soule? But Sancho, thou canst not denie me one thing, when thou didst thus approch her, didst thou not feele a most odoriferous smell, an aromaticall flagrancie, an, I cannot tell what, so pleasing, as I know not how to terme it? I say, such a sent, as if thou werst in some curious perfumers shop? That which I know, quoth Sancho, is, that I felt a little unsavorie sent, somewhat rammish and manlike, and I thinke the reason was, because shee had sweat a little doing of that exercise. It was not so (quoth Don-Quixote) but either thou hadst the murre, or else didst smell thy selfe; for I know very well how that Rose among thornes doth sent, that Lillie of the field, and that chosen Amber. It may well be, said Sancho, as you have said; for I have had many times such a smell, as mee thought the Ladie Dulcinea had then: and though shee smeld to, it were no marvell: for one Divell is like another. And well (quoth Don-Quixote) see here, she hath sifted

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

her corne, and sent it to the Mill. What did she after shee had read the Letter? The Letter said Sancho, shee read it not, for she said she could neither read nor write, and therefore she tore it into small pieces, and would have no man to read it, lest those of the village should know her secrets, and say, that what I had told her by word of mouth of your love and extraordinarie penance, which you remayned doing for her sake was sufficient. And finally she concluded, commaunding me to say unto you, that she had her commended unto you, and that shee remained with greater desire to see you, then to write unto you; and therefore she requested and willed you, as you tended her affection, that presently upon sight hereof you should abandon these shrubbie groves, leave off your frensie, and take presently the way of Toboso. If some matter of greater importance did not occur, for she had very great desire to see and talke with you. She laughed heartily when I told her that you named your selfe the Knight of the ill-favoured face. I demaunded of her, whether the beaten Biscaine came there? And she answered that hee did, and affirmed withall, that he was a very honest man. I asked also for the Galley-slaves, but she tolde me, that she had seene none of them as yet.

All goes well till this, said Don-Quixote: but tell mee, I pray thee what Iewell did shee bestow on thee at thy departure, for reward of the newes thou carriedst unto her of mee? For it is an usuall and auncient custome among Knights and Ladies errant, to bestow on Squires, Damsels, or dwarfes, which bring them any good tidings of their Ladies, or Servants, some rich Iewell, as a reward and thanks of their welcome newes. It may well be, quoth Sancho, and I hold it for a very laudable custom, but I thinke it was only used in times past; for I thinke the manner of this our age is only to give a piece of bread, and cheese: for this was all that my Lady Dulcinea bestowed on me, and that over the yard wals, when I tooke my leave with her. And in signe thereof (well fare all good tokens) the cheese was made of sheepes milke. She is marvellous liberall quoth Don-Quixote: and if she gave thee not a

CHAPTER
III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

Iewell of gold, it was, without doubt, because she had none then about her. ‘But sleeves are good, although they come after the feast.’ I will see her, and then all things shall bee amended. Knowest thou, Sancho, whereat I wonder? It is at this sodaine returne, for it seemes to me thou wast gone, and hast come backe againe in the ayre, for thou hast beeene away but a little more then three daies, Toboso being more then thirtie leagues from hence: And therefore doe beleefe that the wise inchanter, who takes care of mine affaires, and is my friend (for there is such a one of force, and there must bee, under paine that I else should not be a good Knight Errant) I say, I verely thinke that wise man holpe thee to trample unawares of thy selfe: for there are wise men of that condition, which will take a Knight Errant sleeping in his bed; and without knowing how or in what manner hee will wake the next day a thousand Leagues from that place where hee fell a sleepe. And were it not for this, Knights Errant could not succour one another in their most dangerous exigents, as they doe now at every step. For it oft-times befalles, that a Knight is fighting in the Mountaines of Armenia with some divellish Fauno, some dreadfull shaddow, or fierce Knight, where hee is like to have the worst, and in this point of death, when I least expect it, there appeares there on the top of a cloude, or riding in a chariot of fire another Knight his friend, who was but even then in England, and helps him, and delivers him from death, and returnes againe that night to his owne lodging, where hee suppes with a very good appetite, and yet for all that, is there woont to bee, two or three thousand leagues from the one to the other Countrey. All which is compassed by the industrie and wisedome of those skilfull inchaunters, that take care of the said valorous Knights. So that, friend Sancho, I am not hard of beleefe in giving thee credite that thou hast gone and returned in so short a time from this place to Toboso, seeing as I have said, some wise man my friend hath belike transported thee thither by stealth, and unaware, of thy selfe. I easily thinke it, replied Sancho, for Rozinante travailed in good faith as lustily, as if he were an Ægyptians Asse with quicksilver

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

in his eares. And thinkest thou not, quoth Don-Quixote, that he had not quicksilver in his eares? yes and a legion of divels also to helpe it, who are folke that doe travaille and make others goe as much as they list without any weariness.

But leaving all this apart, what is thine opinion that I should doe now, concerning my Ladies commaundement, to goe and see her? for although I know that I am bound to obey her behests: yet doe I finde my selfe disabled at this time to accomplish them, by reason of the grant I have made to the Princesse that comes with us, and the law of armes doth compell mee to accomplish my word, rather then my will: on the one side I am assaulted and urged by a desire to goe and see my Ladie: on the other, my promised faith, and the glory that I shall winne in this enterprize, doe incite and call me away. But that which I resolve to doe, is to travaille with all speed, that I may quickly arrive to the place where that Giant is, and will cut off his head at my comming: and when I have peaceably installed the Princesse in her Kingdome, will presently returne to see the light that doth lighten my senses; to whom I will yeeld such forcible reasons of my so long absence, as she shall easily condescend to excuse my stay, seeing all doth redound to her glory and fame. For all that I have gained, doe winne, or shall hereafter atchieve by force of armes in this life, proceedes wholy from the gracious favour she pleaseth to bestow upon me, and my being hers. O God! quoth Sancho, I perceive that you are greatly diseased in the pate. I pray you Sir tell me whether you mean to go this long voyage for nought? And let slip and lose so rich and so noble a preferment as this? where the dowrie is a Kingdome, which is in good faith as I have heard say, twentie thousand leagues in compasse. And most plentifullly stored with all things necessary for the sustayning of humane life: and that it is greater then Portugall and Castile joyned together? Peace for Gods love, and blush at your owne words, and take my counsaile, and marry presently in the first village that hath a parish Priest: and if you will not doe it there, can you wish a better commodity then to

CHAPTER
III
Of the
pleasant
discourses
continuued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
SanchoPança,
with other
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

have our owne Master Liceniat, who will doe it most excellently? And note that I am old enough to give counsaile, and that this which I now deliver is as fit for you, as if it were expresly cast for you in a mould. For a Sparrow in the fist, is worth more then a flying Bittor.

For he that can have good, and evill doth chuse,
For ill that betides him, must not patience loose.

Why Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote, if thou givest me counsaile to marry, to the end I may become a King after I have slaine the Giant, and have commoditie thereby to promote thee, and give thee what I have promised: I let thee to understand that I may doe all that most easily, without marrying my self. For before I enter into the bataile, I will make this condition, that when I come away victor, although I marry not the Princesse, yet shall a part of the Kingdome bee at my disposition, to bestow upon whom I please; and when I receive it, upon whom wouldest thou have me bestow it but on thy selfe? That is manifest, said Sancho: but I pray you Sir have care to chuse that part you would reserve towards the Seaside, to the end that if the living doe not please me, I may embarke my blacke vassales, and make the benefit of them which I have said. And likewise I pray you not to trouble your minde, thinking to goe and see my Ladie Dulcinea at this time; but travaille towards the place where the Giant is, and kill him, and conclude that businesse first: for I sweare unto you, that I am of opinion it will proove an adventure of very great honour and profit. I assure thee, Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote, thou art in the right, and I will follow thy counsaile in rather going first with the Princesse, then to visite Dulcinea. And I warne thee not to speake a word to any bodie, no not to those that ride with us, of that which wee have heere spoken and discoursed together: for since Dulcinea is so warie and secret, as she would not have her thoughts discovered, it is no reason, that I either by my selfe or any other should detect them.

If that be so quoth Sancho, why then doe you send all those which you vanquish by vertue of your arme to pre-

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

sent themselves to my Lady Dulcinea, seeing this is as good as subsignation of your hands-writing, that you wish her well, and are enamored on her? and seeing that those which goe to her, must forcibly lay them downe on their knees before her presence, and say that they come from you to doe her homage, how then can the thoughts of you both be hidden and concealed? O! how great a foole art thou, and how simple, quoth Don-Quixote. Dost not thou perceive Sancho, how all this results to her greater glory? For thou oughtest to wit, that in our Knightly proceedings, it is great honour, that one Ladie alone have many Knights Errant for her servitors, without extending their thoughts any further then to serve her, only for her high worthes, without attending any other reward of their many and good desires, then that shee will deigne to accept them as her servants and knights. I have heard preach, said Sancho, that men should love our Saviour with that kinde of love, onely for his owne sake, without being mooved thereunto, eyther by the hope of glory, or the feare of paine, although for my part I would love and serve him, for what hee is able to doe. The Divell take thee for a clowne, quoth Don-Quixote, how sharpe and pertinently dost thou speake now and then? able to make a man imagine that thou hast studied. Now by mine honesty, quoth Sancho, I can neyther reade nor write.

Master Nicholas perceiving them drowned thus in their discourses, cried out to them to stay, and drinke of a little fountaine that was by the way. Don-Quixote rested, to Sancho's very great contentment, who was already tyred with telling him so many lies, and was affraid his Master would intrappe him in his owne wordes. For although hee knew Dulcinea to bee of Toboso, yet had hee never seene her in his life. And Cardenio had by this time done on the apparrell Dorotea wore when they found her in the mountaines, which though they were not very good, yet exceeded with great advantage those which he had himselfe before. And allighting hard by the fountain, they satisfied with the provision the Curate had brought with him from the Inne, although it were but little, the great hunger that

CHAPTER
 III
Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

pressed them. And whilst they tooke their ease there, a certaine young stripling that travelled, passed by, who looking very earnestly on all those which sate about the fountaine, he ranne presently after to Don-Quixote, and imbracing his legs, he said, weeping downe right : O my Lord doe not you know mee ? Looke well upon me, for I am the youth Andrew, whom you unloosed from the Oake whereunto I was tyed. Don-Quixote presently knew him, and taking him by the handes, he turned to those that were present, and said, Because you may see of how great importance it is, that there bee Knights Errant in the world, to undoe wrongs and injuries, that are committed in it by the insolent and badde men which live therein, you shall wit that a few daies past, as I rode thorow a wood, I heard certainte lamentable scritches and cries, as of some needfull and afflicted person : I forthwith occurd, borne away by my profession towards the place from whence the lamentable voyce sounded, and I found tied to an Oaken tree, this boy whom you see here in our presence ; for which I am marvellous glad, because if I shall not say the truth, he may checke me. I say that he was tied to the Oake starke naked from the middle upward, and a certaine clowne was opening his flesh with cruell blows that he gave him with the reynes of a bridle : which clown, as I after understood, was his Master. And so, assoone as I saw him, I demaunded the cause of those cruell stripes. The rude fellow answered, that he beat him, because he was his servant, and that certaine negligences of his proceeded rather from being a thiefe, then of simplicity. To which this childe answered : Sir, he whips me for no other cause, but by reason that I demaund my wages of him. His Master replied, I know not now what speeches and excuses, the which although I heard, yet were they not by me admitted. In resolution, I caused him to be loosed, and tooke the clownes oath, that he would take him home, and pay him there his wages, one Riall upon another ; I and those also perfumed. Is it not true, sonne Andrew ? Didst not thou note with what a domineering countenance I commanded it ; and with what humilitie he promised to accomplish all that I imposed, commaunded, and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

desired? Answer me, be not ashamed, nor stagger at all, but tell what passed to these Gentlemen, to the end it may be manifestly seene how necessary it is, as I have said, to have Knights Errant up and downe the high waies.

All that which you have said, quoth the boy, is very true; but the end of the matter succeeded altogether contrary to that which you imagined. How contrarie? quoth Don-Quixote. Why, hath not the peasant paide thee? He not only hath not payed me, answered the boy, but rather as soone as you were passed the wood, and that we remained both alone, he turned againe and tied mee to the same tree, and gave me a fresh so many blowes, as I remained another S. Bartholomew, all fleaed: and at every blow he said some jest or other in derision of you: so that if I had not felt the paine of the stripes so much as I did, I could have found in my heart to have laughed very heartily. In fine, he left me in such pitifull case, as I have beene ever since curing my selfe in an Hospitall of the evil, which the wicked peasant did then unto me. And you are in the fault of al this, for if you had ridden on your way, and not come to the place where you were not sought for, nor intermedled your selfe in other mens affaires, perhaps my Master had contented himself with giving me a doozen or two of strokes, and would presently after have loosed me, and payed me my wages. But by reason you dishonoured him so much without cause, and said to him so many villanies, his choler was inflamed; and seeing he could not revenge it on you, finding himselfe alone, he disburdened the showre on me so heavily, as I greatly feare that I shall never againe be mine own man. The hurt consisted in my departure (quoth Don-Quixote) for I should not have gone from thence, untill I had seene thee payed. For I might have very well knowne by many experiences, that 'there is no clowne that will keepe his word, if he see the keeping of it can turne any way to his damage.' But yet, Andrew, thou dost remember how I swore that if he paied thee not, I would returne and seeke him out, and likewise finde him, although he conveyed himselfe into a Whales belly. Thats true, quoth Andrew, but all availes not: thou shalt see whether it availes or no presently,

CHAPTER
III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER III

Of the
pleasant
discourses
continued
betweene
Don-Quixote,
and his Squire
Sancho Pança,
with other
adventures.

quoth Don-Quixote: and saying so, got up very hastily, and commaunded Sancho to bridle Rozinante, who was feeding whilst they did eate. Dorotea demanded of him what he meant to doe? He answered, that hee would goe and finde out the villaine, and punish him for using such bad proceedings, and cause Andrew to bee paid the last denier, in despite of as many peasants as lived in the world. To which she answered, intreating him to remember that hee could not deale with any other adventure, according to his promise, untill hers were atchieved: and seeing that hee himselfe knew it to bee true better then any other, that hee should pacifie himselfe, untill his returne from her Kingdome. You have reason, said Don-Quixote: and therefore Andrew must have patience perforce untill my returne (as you have said, Madame) and when I shall turne againe, I doe sweare unto him, and likewise renew my promise, never to rest untill he be satisfied and payed. I beleeve not in such oathes, quoth Andrew, but would have as much money as might carry mee to Sivill, rather then all the revenges in the world. Give mee some meate to eate, and carrie away with me, and God bee with you and all other Knights Errant, and I pray God that they may proove as erring to themselves as they have beeene to me.

Sancho tooke out of his bagge a piece of bread and cheese, and giving it to the YOUTH, said, hold, brother, Andrew, for every one hath his part of your misfortune. I pray you what part thereof have you? said Andrew. This piece of bread and cheese that I bestow on thee, quoth Sancho, for God only knowes whether I shall have neede of it againe or no: for thou must wit, friend, that we the Squires of Knights Errant, are very subject to great hunger and evill lucke, yea, and to other things which are better felt then told. Andrew laid hold on his bread and cheese; and seeing that no-body gave him any other thing, hee bowed his head, and went on his way. True it is, that he said to Don-Quixote at his departure: for Gods love, good Sir Knight Errant, if you shall ever meet me againe in the plight you have done, although you should see

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

me torne in pieces, yet doe not succour or helpe me, but leave me in my disgrace; for it cannot be so great, but that a greater will result from your helpe, upon whom and all the other Knights Errant that are borne in the world, I pray God his curse may alight. Don-Quixote thought to arise to chastise him; but he ran away so swiftly, as no man durst follow him and our Knight remained marvellously ashamed at Andrews tale: wherefore the rest with much adoe supprest their desire to laugh, lest they should throughly confound him.

CHAPTER
 III
Of the pleasant discourses, etc.

C H A P T E R V

Treating of that which befell all Don-Quixote his traine in the Inne.



HE dinner being ended, they saddled and went to horse presently, and travelled all that day, and the next without incouning any adventure of price, untill they arrived at the only bugge and scar-crow of Sancho Pança: and though hee would full faine have excused his entry into it, yet could he in no wise avoide it: the Inkeeper, the Hostesse her daughter, and Maritornes seeing Don-Quixote and Sancho returne, went out to receive them with tokens of great love and joy, and he intartained them with grave countenance and applause, and bade them to make him ready a better bedde then the other which they had given unto him the time before. Sir, quoth the Hostesse, if you would pay us better then the last time, we would give you one for a Prince. Don-Quixote answered that he would; they prepared a reasonable good bedde for him in the same wide roome where he lay before: and he went presently to bedde, by reason that he arrived much tyred, and voide of

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

wit. And scarce was he gotten into his chamber, when the Hostesse leaping suddenly on the Barber, and taking him by the beard, said, Now by my selfe blissed, thou shalt use my taile no more for a beard, and thou shalt turne me my taile ; for my husbands combe goes throwne up and down the floore, that it is a shame to see it : I meane the combe that I was wont to hang up in my good taile. The Barber would not give it unto her for all her drawing, until the Licenciate bad him to restore it, that they had now no more use thereof, but that he might now very well discover himselfe, and appeare in his owne shape, and said to Don-Quixote, that after the Galley-slaves had robd him, he fledde to that Inne ; and if Don-Quixote demaunded by chaunce for the Princesse her Squire, that they should tell him, how she had sent him before to her kingdome, to give intelligence to her subjects, that she returned, bringing with her him that should free and give them all libertie. With this the Barber surrendred the taile willingly to the Hostesse, and likewise all the other borrowed wares which she had lent for Don-Quixotes deliverie. All those of the Inne rested wonderfull amazed at Doroteas beautie, and also at the comelinesse of the Shepheard Cardenio. Then the Curate gave order to make readie for them such meat as the Inne could affoord : and the Inkeeper, in hope of better payment, did dresse very speedily for them a reasonable good dinner. Don-Quixote slept all this while, and they were of opinion to let him take his rest, seeing sleepe was more requisite for his disease then meate. At the Table they discoursed (the Inkeeper, his wife, daughter and Mariternes, and all the other travellers being present) of Don-Quixotes strange frensie, and of the maner wherein they found him. The Hostesse eftsoones recounted what had hapned there betweene him and the Carrier ; and looking to see whether Sancho were present, perceiving that hee was away, she tolde likewise all the story of his canvasing, whereat they conceived no little content and pastime. And as the Curate said, that the originall cause of Don-Quixotes madnesse proceeded from the reading of bookees of Knighthood ; the In-keeper answered.

I cannot conceive how that may be, for (as I beleeve)

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

there is no reading so delightfull in this world: and I my selfe have two or three bookees of that kinde with other papers, which doe verily keepe me alive, and not onely me, but many other. For in the reaping times, many of the reapers repaire to this place in the heates of mid-day, and there is evermore some one or other among them that can reade, who takes one of these bookees in hand, and then some thirtie or more of us doe compasse him about, and doe listen to him with such pleasure, as it hinders a thousand hoary hairees: for I dare say at least of my selfe, that when I heare tell of those furious and terrible blowes that Knights Errant give, it inflames me with a desire to become such a one my selfe, and could finde in my heart to be hearing of them day and night. I am just of the same minde no more, nor no lesse, said the Hostesse, for I never have any quiet houre in my house, but when thou art hearing those bookees whereon thou art so besotted, as then thou doest onely forget to chide, which is thy ordinarie exercise at other times. That is very true, said Maritornes. And I in good sooth doe take great delight to heare those things, for they are very fine, and especially when they tell how such a Ladie lies embraced by her Knight under an Orange tree, and that a certaine Damsell keepeth watch all the while, readie to burst for envie that she hath not likewise her sweet heart: And very much afraid. I say that all those things are as sweete as honey to mee. And you, quoth the Curate to the Inkeepers daughter, what do you thinke? I know not in good sooth Sir quoth she, but I do likewise give eare, and in truth although I understand it not, yet doe I take some pleasure to heare them, but I mislike greatly those blowes, which please my father so much; and onely delight in the lamentations that Knightes make, being absent from their Ladies: which in sooth doe now and then make mee weepe through the compassion I take of them. Well then, quoth Dorotea, belike, faire Maiden, you would remedie them, if such plaints were breathed for your owne sake? I know not what I would doe, answered the Gyrle, onely this I know, that there are some of those Ladies so cruell, as their Knights call them Tigres and Lyons, and a thousand other

CHAPTER
V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

wild beasts. And good Iesus, I knew not what unsouled folke they bee, and so without conscience, that because they will not once behold an honorable man, they suffer him either to die or run mad. And I know not to what end serves all that coynesse. For if they doe it for honesties sake, let them marry with them, for the Knights desire nothing more: Peace, childe, quoth the Hostesse, for it seemes that thou knowest too much of those matters, and it is not decent that maidens should know or speake so much: I speake, quoth she, by reason that this good Sir made me the demaund. And I could not in courtesie omit to answere him: Well, said the Curate, let me intreat you good mine Host, to bring us here those bookees, for I would faine see them.

I am pleased, said the Inkeeper: and then entring into his chamber, he brought forth a little old Mallet shut up with a chaine, and opening thereof, he tooke out three great bookees and certaine papers written with a very faire letter. The first booke he opened, was that of *Don Cirongilio of Thracia*. The other *Felizmarte of Hircania*: And the third, *The Historie of the great Captaine, Gonalo Hernandez of Cordova*, with the life of *Diego Garcia of Paredes*, adjoyned. As soone as the Curate had read the titles of the two bookees, he said to the Barber, We have now great want of our friends, the old woman and Neece. Not so much as you thinke, quoth the Barber, for I know also the way to the yard, or the chimney, and in good sooth, there is a fire in it good enough for that purpose. Would you then, quoth the Host burne my bookees? No more of them, quoth the Curate, but these first two of *Don Cirongilio* and *Felizmarte*. Are my bookees perhaps, quoth the Inkeeper, hereticall or flegmaticall, that you would thus roughly handle them? Schismatical thou wouldest have said, quoth the Barber, and not flegmaticall. It is so, said the Inkeeper, but if you will needs burne any, I pray you rather let it be that of the *Great Captaine*, and of that *Diego Garcia*, for I would rather suffer one of my sonnes to be burned, then any one of those other two. Good friend, these two bookees are lying and full of follies and vanities, but that of the

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Great Captaine is true, and containeth the artes of Gonçalo Hernandez of Cordova: who for his sundrie and noble acts, merited to be termed by all the world, The great Captaine, a name famous, illustrious, and onely deserved by himselfe, and this other Diego Garcia of Paredes was a noble Gentleman, borne in the Citie of Truxillo in Estremadura, and was a most valorous souldier, and of so surpassing force, as hee would detaine a mill wheele with one hand from turning in the midst of the speediest motion: and standing once at the end of a bridge with a two handed sword, defended the passage against a mightie armie that attempted to passe over it: and did so many other things, that if another, who were a stranger and unpassionate, had written them, as he did himselfe who was the relater and historiographer of his owne acts, and therefore recounted them with the modestie of a Gentleman, and proper Chronicler; they would have drowned all the Hectors, Achillises and Rollands in oblivion.

There is a jest, quoth the Inkeeper, deale with my father, I pray you, see at what you wonder. A wise tale, at the withholding of the wheele of a mill. I sware you ought to read that which is read in *Felixmarte of Hircania*, who with one thwart blow cut five mighty Giants in halffes, as if they were of beanes, like to the little Friers that children make of bean-cods. And set another time upon a great and most powerful army of more then a million and sixe hundred thousand souldiers, and overthrew and scattered them all like a flocke of sheepe. What then can you say to me of the good Don Cirongilio of Thracia, who was so animous and valiant as may be seene in his booke: wherein is laid downe, that as he sayled along a River, there issued out of the middest of the water a serpent, of fire, and he, as soone as he perceived it, leaped upon her, and hanging by her squamie shoulders he wroong her throat so straitly betweene both his armes, that the Serpent perceiving her selfe to bee well-nigh strangled, had no other way to save her selfe, but by diving down into the deeps, carrying the knight away with her, who would never let goe his gripe, and when they came to the bottome, he found himselfe by a Pallace in such

CHAPTER
V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

faire and pleasant gardens, as it was a wonder: and presently the Serpent turned into an old man, which said to him such things as there is no more to be desired. Two figs for the Great Captaine, and that Diego Garcia, of whom you speake.

Dorotea hearing him speake thus, said to Cardenio, mee thinks our host wants but litle to make up a second part of Don-Quixote? So it seemes to me likewise replied Cardenio, for as we may conjecture by his words, he certainly beleeves that every thing written in those bookees passed just as it is laid down, and barefooted friers would be scarce able to perswade him the contrary. Know, friend (quoth the Curate to the Inkeeper) that there was never any such man as Felixmarte of Hircania, or Don Cirongilio of Thracia, nor other such Knights, as books of Chivalry recount. For all is but a device and fiction of idle wits that composed them, to the end that thou sayest, to passe over the time, as your readers do in reading of them. For I sincerely sweare unto thee, that there were never such knights in the world, nor such adventures and ravings hapned in it. Cast that bone to another dog, quoth the Inkeeper, as though I knew not how many numbers are five, and where the shoo wrests me now. I pray you, Sir, goe not about to give me pappe, for by the Lord I am not so white. Is it not a good sport that you labour to perswade mee that al that which these good books say, are but ravings and fables, they being printed by grace and priviledge of the Lords of the privie Counsell; as if they were folke that would permit so many lies to be printed at once: and so many battels and enchantments, as are able to make a man runne out of his wits. I have told thee already, friend (said the Curate) that this is done for the recreation of our idle thoughts: and so even as in welgovernd commonwealths, the plaies of Chesse, Tennis, and Trucks are tollerated for the pastime of some men, which have none other occupation, and either ought not, or cannot work: even so such books are permitted to be printed: presuming (as in truth they ought) that no man would be found so simple and ignorant, as to hold any of these bookees for a true history. And if my leasure per-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

mitted, and that it were a thing requisite for this auditory, I could say many things concerning the subject of books of knighthood, to the end that they should be well contrived, and also be pleasant and profitable to the readers: but I hope sometime to have the commoditie to communicate my conceit with those that may redresse it. And in the meane while you may beleeve good mine host what

CHAPTER V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

I have said, and take to you your booke, and agree with their truthe or leasings as you please, and much good may it do you. And I pray God that you hault not in time on the foot that your guest Don-Quixote halteth. Not so, quoth the Inkeeper, for I will never be so wood as to become a Knight errant, for I see well, that what was used in the times of these famous Knights, is now in no use nor request.

Sancho came in about the midst of this discourse, and rested much confounded and pensative of that which he heard them say, that Knights Errant were now in no request, and that the booke of Chivalry, onely contained follies and lies: and purposed with himselfe to see the end of that voyage of his Lords, and that if it sorted not the wished successe which he expected, he resolved to leave him, and returne home to his wife and children, and accustomed labour. The Inkeeper thought to take away his booke and budget, but the Curate withheld him, saying, stay a while, for I would see what papers are those which are written in so faire a character. The host took them out and gave them to him to read, being in number some eight sheets with a title written in text letters, which said, *The History of the curious impertinent*: The Curate read two or three lines softly to himselfe, and said after, truly, the title of this History doth not mislike mee, and therefore I am about to reade it through. The Inkeeper hearing him, said, your reverence may very well do it, for I assure you, that some guests which have read it here as they travelled, did commend it exceedingly, and have begd it of me as earnestly, but I would never bestow it, hoping some day to restore it to the owner of this Mallet, who forgot it heere behind him with these booke and papers,

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

V

Treating of
that which
befell all Don-
Quixote his
traine in the
Inne.

for it may be that he will sometime returne, and although I know that I shall have great want of the booke, yet will I make to him restitution, for although I am an Inkeeper, yet God be thanked I am a Christian therewithall. You have great reason my friend, quoth the Curate, but yet notwithstanding if the tast like me, thou must give me leave to take a copie thereof; with all my heart, replied the host. And as they two talked, Cardenio taking the booke began to reade a little of it, and it pleasing him as much as it had done the Curate, he requested him to reade it in such sort as they might al heare him: that I would willingly do said the Curate, if the time were not now more fit for sleeping then reading. It were sufficient repose for me said Dorotea, to passe away the time listening to some tale or other, for my spirit is not yet so well quieted, as to affoord me licence to sleepe, even then when nature exacteth it. If that be so quoth the Curate, I will read it if it were but for curiositie, perhaps it containeth some delightfull matter. Master Nicholas and Sancho intreated the same: the Curate seeing and knowing that he should therein do them all a pleasure, and he himselfe likewise receive as great, said, seeing you will needs heare it, be all of you attentive, for the Historie beginneth in this manner.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is rehearsed the Historie of the
curious impertinent.



NFlorence, a rich and famous Citie of Italie, in the Province called Tuscane, there dwelled two rich and principall Gentlemen called Anselmo and Lothario, which two were so great friends, as they were named for excellency and by Antonomasia, by all those that knew them, the two friends. They were both batchelers, and much of one age and manners; all which was of force to make them answer one another with reciprocall amity. True it is, that Anselmo was somewhat more inclined to amorous dalliance then Lothario, who was altogether addicted to hunting. But when occasion exacted it, Anselmo would omit his owne pleasures to satisfie his friends, and Lothario likewise his, to please Anselmo. And by this meanes both their wils were so correspondent, as no clocke could be better ordred then were their desires. Anselmo being at last deeply enamoured of a principall and beautifull young Ladie of the same Citie, called Camila, being so worthily descended, and she her selfe of such merit therewithall, as he resolved (by the consent of his friend Lothario, without whom he did nothing) to demand her of her parents for wife, and did put his purpose in execution: and Lothario himselfe was the messenger, and concluded the matter so to his friends satisfaction, as he was shortly after put in possession of his desires: and Camila so contented to have gotten Anselmo, as she ceased not to render Heaven and Lothario thankes, by whose meanes she had obtained so good a match. The first dayes, as all marriage daies are wont to be merry Lothario frequented, according to the custome, his friend Anselmo's house, endevouring to honor,

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

feast and recreate him all the wayes he might possible: but after the Nuptials were finished, and the concourse of strangers visitations and congratulations somewhat ceased, Lothario also began to be somewhat more slacke then he wonted in going to Anselmo his house, deeming it (as it is reason that all discreet men should) not so convenient to visit or haunt so often the house of his friend after marriage, as he would, had he still remained a Batcheler. For although true amitie neyther should, or ought to admit the least suspition: yet notwithstanding a married mans honour is so delicate and tender a thing, as it seemes it may be sometimes impayred even by very brethren, and how much more by friends. Anselmo noted the remisnes of Lothario, and did grievously complaine thereof, saying, that if he had wist by marriage he should thus be deprived of his dearest conversation, he would never have married; and that since through the uniforme correspondencie of them both being free, they had deserved the sweet title of 'the two friends,' that he should not now permit (because he would be noted circumspect without any other occasion) that so famous and pleasing a name should be lost: and therefore he requested him (if it were lawfull to use such a terme betweene them two) to returne and be Master of his house, and come and goe, as he had done before his marriage, assuring him that his Spouse Camila had no other pleasure and will, then that which himselfe pleased she should have: and that she, after having knowne how great was both their friendships, was not a little amazed to see him become so strange.

To all these and many other reasons alleged by Anselmo, to perswade Lothario to frequent his house, he answered with so great prudence, discretion and warinessse, as Anselmo remained satisfied of his friends good intention herein: and they made an agreement betweene them two, that Lothario should dine at his house twice a weeke, and the Holy-daisies besides. And although this agreement had passed betweene them, yet Lothario purposed to doe that onely which he should finde most expedient for his friends honour, whose reputation he tendered much more deerely then he did his

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

owne; and was wont to say very discreetly, that the married man unto whom heaven had given a beautifull wife, ought to have as much heede of the friends which hee brought to his house, as he should of the women friends that visited his wife, for that which is not done nor agreed upon in the Church or Market, nor in publike feasts or stations (being places that a man cannot lawfully hinder his wife from frequenting somtimes at least) are oft-times facilitated, and contrived in a friends or kinsewomans house, whom perhaps we never suspected. Anselmo on the other side affirmed, that therefore married men ought every one of them to have some friend who might advertise them of the faults escaped in their manner of proceeding; for it befals many times, that through the great love which the husband beares towards his wife, eyther he doth not take notice, or else he doth not advertise her, because he would not offend her to doe, or omit to doe certaine things, the doing or omitting whereof, might turne to his honour or obloquie: to which things being advertised by his friend hee might easily apply some remedie: but where might a man finde a friend so discreet, loyall and trustie as Anselmo demaunds? I know not truely, if not Lothario; for he it was, that with all sollicitude and care regarded the honour of his friend: and therefore endevoured to clip and diminish the number of the daies promised, lest he should give occasion to the idle vulgar, or to the eyes of vagabonds and malitious men to judge any sinister thing, viewing so rich, comely, noble, and qualified a young man as he was, to have so free accessee into the house of a woman so beautifull as Camila. For though his vertues and modest carriage were sufficiently able to set a bridle to any malignant tongue, yet notwithstanding he would not have his credit, nor that of his friends called into any question, and therefore would spend most of the dayes that he had agreed, to visite his friend, in other places and exercises; yet fayning excuses so plausible, as his friend admitted them for very reasonable. And thus the time passed on in challenges of unkindnesse of these one side, and lawfull excuses of the other.

It so fell out, that as both the friends walked on a day

CHAPTER
VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

together in a field without the Citie, Anselmo said to Lothario these words ensuing. I know very well, friend Lothario, that among all the favours, which God of his bountie hath bestowed upon me, by making me the sonne of such parents, and giving to me with so liberall a hand, both the goods of Nature and Fortune: yet as I cannot answer him with sufficient gratitude for the benefits alreadie received, so doe I finde my selfe most highly bound unto him above all others, for having given me such a friend as thou art, and so beautifull a wife as Camila; being both of you such pawnes, as if I esteeme you not in the degree which I ought, yet doe I hold you as deere as I may. And yet possessing all those things which are wont to bee the all and some, that are wont, and may make a man happy, I live notwithstanding the most sullen and discontented life of the world. Being troubled, I know not since when and inwardly wrested with so strange a desire, and extravagant from the common use of others, as I marvaile at my selfe, and doe condemne and rebuke my selfe when I am alone, and do labour to conceale and cover mine owne desires, all which hath served me to as little effect, as if I had proclaimed mine owne errors purposely to the world. And seeing that it must finally breake out, my will is that it bee onely communicated to the treasury of thy secret. Hoping that by it and mine owne industry which (as my true friend) thou wilt use to helpe me, I shall be quickly freed from the anguish it causeth, and by thy meanes my joy and contentment shall arrive to the passe, that my discontents have brought mee through mine owne folly.

Lothario stood suspended at Anselmo's speech, as one that could not imagine, to what so prolix a prevention and preamble tended: And although he revolved and imagined sundry things in his mind which hee deemed might afflict his friend, yet did he ever shooote wide from the marke which in truth it was: and that he might quickly escape that agonie, wherein the suspension held him, he said that his friend did notable injurie to their amitie in searching out wreathings and ambages in the discovery of his most hidden thoughts to him, seeing he might assure himself

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

certainely, either to receive counsels of him how to entertain, or else remedy and meanes how to accomplish them. It is very true, answered Anselmo, and with that confidence I let thee to understand friend Lothario, that the desire which vexeth me, is a longing to know, whether my wife Camila be as good and perfect, as I doe account her: and I cannot wholly rest satisfied of this truth, but by making triall of her, in such sort, as it may give manifest argument of the degree of her goodnesse, as the fire doth shew the value of gold. For I am of opinion (O friend) that a woman is of no more worth or vertue, then that which is in her, after she hath **bene solicited*, and that she alone is strong, who cannot be bowed by the promises, gifts, tears, and continual importunitie of importunate Lovers. For what thanks is it (quoth he) for a woman to be good, if no bodie say or teach her ill? What wonder that she be retired and timerous, if no occasion be ministred to her of dissolution, and chiefly she that knowes she hath a husband readie to kill her, for the least argument of lightnesse? So that she which is onely good for feare, or want of occasion, will I never hold in that estimation, that I would the other sollicited and pursued, who notwithstanding comes away crowned with the victory. And therefore being moved as well by these reasons, as by many other, which I could tell you, which accredite and fortifie mine opinion, I desire that my wife Camila doe also passe thorow the pikes of those proofes and difficulties, and purifie and refine her selfe in the fire of being requested, solicited and pursued; and that by one whose worthes and valour may deserve acceptance in her opinion: and if she beare away the Palme of the victory, as I beleeve shee will, I shall account my fortune matchlesse, and may brag that my desires are in their height: and will say that a strong woman hath faine to my lot, of whom the Wise man saith, 'Who shall finde her?' and when it shall succeed contrary to mine expectation I shall with the pleasure that I will conceive to see how rightly it jumps with mine opinion, beare very indifferently the grieve which in all reason, this so costly a triall must stir in me. And presupposing that

2 : I

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

**Casta est
quam nemo
rogavit.*

65

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

nothing which thou shalt say to mee, shall be availeable to hinder my designe, or dissuade me from putting my purpose in execution; I would have thy selfe, deere friend Lothario, to provide thee to be the instrument, that shall labour this worke of my liking, and I will give thee oportunitie enough to perorme the same without omitting any thing that may further thee in the solicitation of an honest, noble, warie, retired, and passionlesse woman.

And I am chiefly moved to commit this so hard an enterprize to thy trust, because I know that if Camila be vanquished by thee, yet shall not the victory arrive to the last push and upshot, but onely to that of accounting a thing to bee done, which shall not be done for many good respects. So shall I remaine nothing offended, and mine injury concealed in the vertue of thy silence; for I know thy care to be such in matters concerning mee, as it shall be eternall like that of death. And therefore if thou desirest that I may leade a life, deserving that name, thou must forthwith provide thy selfe to enter into this amorous conflict, and that not languishing or slouthfully, but with that courage and diligence which my desire expecteth, and the confidence I have in our amitie assureth me.

These were the reasons used by Anselmo to Lothario; to all which he was so attentive as untill he ended, hee did not once unfold his lippes to speake a word save those which we have above related: and seeing that he spoke no more; after he had beheld him a good while, as a thing that he had never before, and did therefore strike him into admiration and amazement he said. Friend Anselmo I cannot perswade my selfe, that the words you have spoken be other then jests, for had I thought that thou wert in earnest, I would not have suffered thee to passe on so farre, and by lending thee no eare, would have excused this tedious Oration. I doe verily imagine, that either thou doest not know me, or I thee: but not so; for I know thee to bee Anselmo, and thou, that I am Lothario: the dammage is, that I thinke thou are not the Anselmo thou wast wont to be, and perhaps thou deemest me not to be the accustomed Lothario

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that I ought to be : for the things which thou hast spoken, are not of that Anselmo my friend ; nor those which thou seekest, ought to be demaunded of that Lothario, of whom thou hast notice. For true friends ought to prove and use their friends, as the Poet said, *Usque ad Aras* : that is, that they should in no sort employ them or implore their assistance in things offensive unto God : and if a Gentile was of this opinion in matters of friendship, how much greater reason is it that a Christian should have that feeling, specially knowing that the celestiall amitie is not to be lost for any humane friendship whatsoeuer ? And when the friend should throw the barres so wide, as to set heavenly respectes apart, for to compliment with his friend, it must not be done on light grounds, or for things of small moment, but rather for those wheron his friends life and honour wholy depends. Then tell me now Anselmo, in which of these two things art thou in danger, that I may adventure my person to doe thee a pleasure ; and attempt so detestable a thing as thou doest demaund ? None of them truely, but rather doest demaund, as I may conjecture, that I doe industriously labour to deprive thee of thine honour and life together, and in doing so, I likewise deprive my selfe of them both. For if I must labour to take away thy credit, it is most evident, that I dispoile thee of life, for a man without reputation, is worse then a dead man : and I being the instrument (as thou desirest that I should be) of so great harme unto thee, doe not I become likewise thereby dishonoured, and by the same consequence also without life ? Heare mee friend Anselmo, and have patience not to answere me until I have said all that I think, concerning that which thy minde exacteth of thee. For wee shall have after leasure enough, wherein thou mayest reply, and I have patience to listen unto thy reasons.

I am pleased, quoth Anselmo, say what thou likkest : And Lothario prosecuted his speech in this manner, me thinks, Anselmo, that thou art now of the Moores humors, which can by no meanes be made to understand the errour of their sect. Neither by Citations of the holy Scripture, nor by reasons which consist in speculations of the understand-

CHAPTER
VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

ing, or that are founded in the Articles of the faith: but must be won by palpable examples, and those, easie, intelligible, demonstrative and doubtlesse, by Mathematicall demonstrations which cannot be denied. Even as when we say, ‘If from two equal parts, wee take away two parts equal, the parts that remaine are also equal.’ And when they cannot understand this, as in truth they doe not, we must demonstrate it to them with our hands, and lay it before their eyes, and yet for all this, nought can availe to winne them in the end to give credit to the verities of our religion, which very termes and manner of proceeding I must use with thee, by reason that the desire which is sprung in thee, doth so wander and stray from all that which beares the shadow onely of reason, as I doubt much that I shall spend my time in vaine, which I shall bestow to make thee understand thine owne simplicity, for I will give it no other name at this present: and in good earnest I was almost perswaded to leave thee in thine humour, in punishment of thine inordinate and unreasonable desire, but that the love which I beare towards thee doth not consent, I use to thee such rigour, or leave thee in so manifest a danger of thine owne perdition. And that thou maist cleerely see it, tell me Anselmo, hast not thou said unto me, that I must sollicit one that stands upon her reputation: perswade an honest woman, make proffers to one that is not passionate or engaged? and serve a discrete woman? yes, thou hast said all this. Well then, if thou knowest already that thou hast a retyred, honest, unpassionate, and prudent wife, what seekest thou more? And if thou thinkest that she will rest victorious after all mine assaults, as doubtlesly she will, what better titles wouldest thou after bestow upon her, then those she possessest already? eyther it proceeds because thou dost not thinke of her as thou sayest, or els because thou knowest not what thou demaundest. If thou dost not account her such as thou praysest her, to what end wouldest thou prove her, but rather as an evill person, use her as thou likest best: but if she be as good as thou beleevest, it were an impertinent thing to make tryall of truth it selfe. For after it is made, yet it will still rest

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

only with the same reputation it had before. Wherfore it is a concluding reason, that to attempt things whence rather harme may after result unto us then good, is the part of rash and discourseless braines, and principally when they deale with those things whereunto they are not compelled or driven, and that they see even a farre off, how the attempting the like is manifest folly. Difficult things are undertaken for God, or the world, or both. Those that are done for God, are the workes of the Saints, indeavouring to leade Angels lives in fraile and mortall bodies. Those of the world are the travells and toiles of such as crosse such immense seas, travell through so adverse regions, and converse with so many nations, to acquire that which we call the goods of Fortune. And the things acted for God and the world together, are the worthy exploits of resolute and valorous martiall men, which scarce perceive so great a breach in the adversarie wall, as the common billet is wont to make, when leaving all feare apart, without making any discourse, or taking notice of the manifest danger that threatens them, borne away by the wings of desire and honour to serve God, their Nation and Prince, doe throw themselves boldly into the throate of a thousand menacing deaths which expect them.

These are things wont to be practised, and it is honour, glory and profit to attempt them, be they never so full of inconveniences and danger: but that which thou sayest, thou wilt trie and put in practice, shall never gaine thee Gods glorie, the goods of Fortune, or renoune among men: for suppose that thou bringest it to passe according to thine owne fantasie, thou shalt remaine nothing more contented, rich or honorable then thou art already: and if thou doest not, then shalt thou see thy selfe in the greatest miserie of any wretch living: for it will little availe thee then, to thinke that no man knowes the disgrace befallen thee, it being sufficient both to afflict and dissolve thee, that thou knowest it thy selfe, and for greater confirmation of this truth I will repeate unto thee a stanza of the famous Poet Ludovico Tansilo in the end of his first part of *Saint Peters teares*, which is :

CHAPTER
VI
Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

The grieve increaseth, and withall the shame,
In Peter when the day it selfe did show.
And though he no man sees, yet doth he blame
Himselfe, because he had offended so :
For brests, magnanimous not onely tame,
When that of others, they are seene, they know.
But of themselves ashamed they often bee,
Though none but Heaven and Earth their errour see.

So that thou canst not excuse thy grieve, with secrecie,
be it never so great, but rather shalt have continuall
occasion to weepe, if not watry teares from thine eyes,
at least teares of bloud from thy heart, such as that
simple Doctor wept, of whom our Poet makes mention,
who made triall of the vessell, which the prudent Reynaldos
upon maturer discourse refused to deale withall: and al-
though it be but a Poeticall fiction, yet doth it containe
many hidden morals, worthy to bee noted, understood
and imitated: how much more seeing that by what I
meane to say now, I hope thou shalt begin to conceave
the great errour which thou wouldest wittingly commit.
Tell me, Anselmo, if heaven or thy fortunes had made thee
Lord and lawfull possessor of a most precious Diamante,
of whose goodnesse and qualitie all the Lapidarists that
had viewed the same would rest satisfied, and that all of
them would joynly and uniformely affirme that it arrived
in quality, goodnes, and finesse to all that, to which the
Nature of such a stone might extend it selfe, and that
thou thy selfe didst beleeve the same, without witting any
thing to the contrary: would it be just that thou shouldest
take an humour to set that Diamant betweene an Anvile
and a hammer; and to trie there by very force of blowes
whether it be so hard and so fine as they say? And farther,
when thou didst put thy designe in execution, put the case
that the stone made resistance to thy foolish triall, yet
wouldest thou adde thereby no new valour or esteeme to it?
and if it did breake as it might befall, were not then all
lost? Yes certainly, and that leaving the owner in all
mens opinion for a very poore ignorant person. Then friend
Anselmo, make account that Camila is a most precious
Diamant, as well in thine, as in other mens estimation,

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and it is no reason to put her in contingent danger of breaking, seeing that although she remain in her integrity, she cannot mount to more worth then she hath at the present; and if she faltred, or did not resist, consider even at this present, what state you would be in then, and how justly thou mightest then complaine of thy selfe, for being cause of her perdition and thine owne? See how there is no jewell in the world comparable to the modest and chaste woman. And that all womens honour consists in the good opinion thaths had of them: and seeing that of thy spouse is so great, as it arrives to that summe of perfection which thou knowest, why wouldest thou call this verity in question? Know friend, that a woman is an imperfect creature, and should therefore have nothing cast in her way to make her stumble and fall, but rather to cleere, and doe all incumbrances away out of it, to the end she may without impeachment run with a swift course to obtaine the perfection she wants, which only consists in being vertuous.

The Naturalists recount, that the Ermine is a little beast that hath a most white skinne, and that when the Hunters would chase him, they use this art to take him: as soone as they finde out his haunt, and places where he hath recourse, they thwart them with mire and dirt, and after when they discrie the little beast, they pursue him towards those places which are defiled: and the Erimine espying the mire standes still, and permits himselfe to be taken and captived in exchange of not passing through the mire, or stayning of his whitenesse, which it esteemes more then either liberty or life. The honest and chaste woman is an Ermine, and the vertue of chastitie is whiter and purer then Snow: and he that would not lose it, but rather desires to keepe and preserve it, must proceed with a different stile from that of the Ermine. For they must not propose and lay before her the mire of the passions, flatteries and services of importunate Lovers; for perhaps shee shall not have the naturall impulse and force which commonly through proper debility is wont to stumble, to passe over those incumbrances safely: and therefore it is requisite to free the passage and take

CHAPTER
VI
Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

them away, and lay before her the cleerenesse of vertue, and the beauty comprised in good fame. The good woman is also like unto a bright and cleere mirrour of Crystall, and therfore is subject to be stained and dimmed by every breath that toucheth it. The honest woman is to be used as reliques of Saints, to wit, she must be honoured, but not touched. The good woman is to be kept and prized like a faire Garden full of sweet flowers and Roses, that is held in estimation; whose owner permits no man to enter and trample, or touch his flowers, but holdes it to be sufficient, that they standing a farre off without the railes, may joy at the delightfull sight, and fragrancie thereof. Finally I will repeat certaine verses unto thee that have now come to my memorie, the which were repeated of late in a new play, and seeme to mee very fit for the purpose of which we treat. A prudent olde man did give a neighbour of his that had a daughter, counsaile to keepe and shut her up: and among many other reasons hee used these:

Truely woman is of glasse,
Therefore no man ought to trie
If she broke or not might bee,
Seeing all might come to passe.
Yet to breake her tis more easie,
And it is no wit to venter
A thing of so brittle temper,
That to soulder is so queasie.
And I would have all men dwell
In this truth, and reasons ground,
That if Danaes, may be found,
Golden shrowres are found as well.

All that which I have said to thee Anselmo untill this instant, hath beene for that which may touch thy selfe: and it is now high time that somewhat bee heard concerning me. And if by chance I shall be somewhat prolix, I pray thee to pardon me; for the Labyrinth wherein thou hast entred, and out of which thou wouldest have mee to free thee, requires no lesse. Thou holdest me to be thy friend, and yet goest about to dispoyle me of mine honour, being a thing contrary to all amitie; and dost not onely pretend this, but dost likewise indeavour that I should robbe thee of

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the same, that thou wouldest deprive me of mine is evident; for when Camila shall perceive that I sollicite her as thou demaundest, it is certaine that she will esteeme of me, as of one quite devoide of wit, and indiscreet, seeing I intend and doe a thing so repugnant to that, which the being that him I am, and thine amitie doe binde me unto, that thou wouldest have me rob thee thereof is as manifest; for Camila seeing mee thus to court her, must imagine that I have noted some lightnesse in her, which lent me boldnes thus to discover unto her my depraved desires, and she holding her selfe to be thereby injured and dishonoured, her disgrace must also concerne thee as a principall part of her. And hence springs that which is commonly said, that the husband of the adulterous wife, although he know nothing of her lewdnesse, nor hath given any occasion to her to doe what she ought not, nor was able any way to hinder by diligence, care, or other means his disgrace, yet is intituled with a vituperious and vile name, and is in a manner beheld by those that know his wives malice, with the eyes of contempt; whereas they should indeed regard him rather with those of compassion, seeing that hee fals into that misfortune, not so much through his owne default, as through the light fantasie of his wicked consort. But I will shew thee the reason why a badde womans husband is justly dishonoured and contemned, although he be ignorant and guiltlesse thereof, and cannot prevent nor hath given to it any occasion. And be not grieved to heare me, seeing the benefit of the discourse shall redound unto thy selfe.

When God created our first parent in the terrestriall Paradise, the holy Scripture saith, 'that God infused sleepe into Adam,' and that being asleepe, he tooke out a ribbe out of his left side, of which hee formed our mother Eve, and as soone as Adam awaked and beheld her, he said, this is flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bones. And God said, for this cause shall a man leave his father and his mother, and they shall be two in one flesh, and then was the divine Sacrament of Matrimonie first instituted, with such indissoluble knots, as onely may be by death dissolved. And this marvellous Sacrament is of such efficacie and force, as

CHAPTER
VI
Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

it makes two different persons to be one very flesh, and yet operates farther in good married folke: For although they have two soules, yet it makes them to have but one will. And hence it proceeds, that by reason the wives flesh is one and the very same with her husbands, the blemishes or defects that taint it, doe also redound into the husbands, although he (as we have said) have ministred no occasion to receive that dammage. For as all the whole body feeleth any paine of the foote, head or any other member, because it is all one flesh: and the head smarts at the griefe of the Ankle, although it hath not caused it, so is the husband participant of his wives dishonour, because he is one and the selfesame with her. And by reason that all the honours and dishonours of the world are, and spring from flesh and bloud; and those of the badde woman be of this kinde, it is forcible, that part of them fall to the husbands share, and that he be accounted dishonourable, although he wholly be ignorant of it. See then Anselmo to what perill thou doest thrust thy selfe, by seeking to disturbe the quietnesse and repose wherein thy wife lives: and for how vaine and impertinent curiositie thou wouldest stir up the humors which are now quiet in thy chaste spouses brest; note how the thing thou dost adventure to gaine, is of small moment, but that which thou shalt lose so great, that I must leave it in his point, having no wordes sufficiently able to indeere it. But if all that I have said, be not able to move thee from thy badde purpose; thou mayest well seeke out for some other instrument of thy dishonour and mishaps: for I meane not to be one, although I should therefore lose thine amitie, which is the greatest losse that might any way befall mee.

Here the prudent Lothario held his peace, and Anselmo remained so confounded and melancholie, as he could not answeare a word to him, for a very great while. But in the end he said. I have listned, friend Lothario, to all that which thou hast said unto me, with the attention which thou hast noted. And have perceived in thy reasons, examples, and similitudes, the great discretion wherewithall thou art indowed, and the perfection of amitie that thou

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

hast attained : and do also confesse and see, that if I follow not thine advice, but should leane unto mine owne, I doe but shunne the good, and pursue the evill. Yet oughtest thou likewise to consider, how herein I suffer the disease which some women are wont to have, that long to eate earth, lime, coales, and other far worse and loathsome things, even to the very sight, and much more to the taste. So that it is behovefull to use some art by which I may be cured, and this might be easily done, by beginning only to sollicite Camila although you did it but weake and fainedly : for I know shee will not bee so soft and pliable, as to dash her honestie about the ground at the first encounters, and I will rest satisfied with this commencement alone : and thou shalt herein accomplish the obligation thou owest to our friendship, by not onely restoring mee to life, but also by perswading me not to dispoile my selfe of mine honour. And thou art bound to doe this for one reason that I shall alledge, to wit, that I being resolved as indeed I am to make this experience, thou oughtest not to permit being my friend, that I should bewray my defect herein to a stranger, whereby I might very much indanger my reputation, which thou labourest so much to preserve, and though thy credit may lose some degrees in Camila's opinion, whilst thou dost sollicite her, it matters not very much or rather nothing ; for very shortly, when wee shall espie in her the integrarie that we expect, thou maist open unto her sincerely the drift of our practice, by which thou shalt againe recover thine impaired reputation. Therefore seeing the adventure is little, and the pleasure thou shalt doe me by the enterprizing thereof so, too great, I pray thee doe it, though ever so many incumbrances represent themselves to thee, for (as I have promised) with onely thy beginning, I will rest satisfied and account the cause concluded.

Lothario perceiving the firme resolution of Anselmo, and nothing else occurring forcibly disswasive, nor knowing what other reasons to use, that might hinder this his precipitate resolution : and noting withall, how hee threatned to break the matter of this his indiscreet desires to a stranger : he determined to avoid greater inconveniences to give him

CHAPTER
VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

satisfaction, and performe his demaund, with purpose and resolution to guide the matter so discreetly, as without troubling Camila's thoughts, Anselmo should rest contented, and therefore intreated him not to open his mind to any other, for he himselfe would undertake that enterprise, and beginne it whensoever he pleased. Anselmo imbraced him very tender and lovingly, and gratified him as much for that promise, as if hee had done him some very great favour: and there they accorded betweene them, that he should beginne the worke the very next day insuing, for he would give him place and leasure to speake alone with Camila, and would likewise provide him of money, jewels, and other things to present unto her. He did also admonish him to bring musicke under her windowes by night, and write verses in her praise, and if he would not take the paine to make them, he himselfe would compose them for him. Lothario promised to performe all himselfe, yet with an intention far wide from Anselmos; and with this agreement they returned to Anselmos house, where they found Camila somewhat sad and carefull, expecting her husbands returne, who had stayed longer abroad that day then his custome. Lothario leaving him at his house, returned to his owne, as pensive as he had left Anselmo contented, and knew not what plot to lay, to issue out of that impertinent affaire with prosperous successe. But that night hee bethought himselfe of a manner how to deceive Anselmo without offending Camila: and so the next day insuing hee came to his friends house to dinner, where Camila knowing the great good will her husband bore towards him, did receave and entertaine him very kindly with the like: dinner being ended, and the table taken up, Anselmo requested Lothario to keepe Camila company untill his returne, for he must have gone about an affaire that concerned him greatly, but would returne againe within an houre and a halfe. Camila intreated her husband to stay, and Lothario proferd to goe and keepe him companie, but nothing could prevale with Anselmo, but rather he importuned his friend Lothario, to remaine and abide there till his returne, because hee must goe to treate of a matter of much consequence. Hee also commanded Camila not to

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

leave Lothario alone untill he came backe. And so he departed, leaving Camila and Lothario together at the table, by reason that all the attendants and servants were gone to dinner.

Here Lothario saw that he was entred into the lists, which his friend so much desired, with his adversarie before him, who was with her beautie able to overcome a whole squadron of armed Knights ; see then if Lothario had not reason to feare himselfe ? but that which he did at the first onset was to lay his elbow on the arme of his chaire, and his hand on his cheeke, and desiring Camila to beare with his respectlesnesse therein, he said he would repose a little, whilst he attended Anselmo's comming. Camila answered that shee thought hee might take his ease better on the cushions of State, and therefore prayed him hee would enter into the parler and lye on them. But he excused himselfe, and so remained a sleepe in the same place, untill Anselmo's returne, who comming in, and finding his wife in her Chamber and Lothario a sleepe, made full account, that by reason of his long stay, they had time enough both to talke, and repose, and therefore expected very greedily the houre wherein his friend should awake, to go out with him, and learne what successe he had : all succeeded as he wished, for Lothario arose, and both of them went abroad, and then hee demanded of him what he desired : and Lothario answered, that it seemed not to him so good to discover al his meaning at the first, and therefore had done no other thing at that time, then speake a little of her beautie and discretion, for it seemed to him that this was the best preamble he could use, to gaine by little and little some interest and possession in her acceptance, to dispose her thereby the better to give eare againe to his words more willingly, imitating therein the Divels craft when he meanes to deceive any one that is vigilant and carefull, for then he translates himselfe into an Angell of light, being one of darkenesse, and laying before him apparent goods, discovers what he is in the end, and brings his intention to passe, if his guiles be not at the beginning detected. All this did greatly like Anselmo, who said that he would afforde him every dav as

CHAPTER
VI
Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

much leisure, although he did not goe abroad, for he would spend the time so at home, as Camila should never be able to suspect his drift.

It therefore befell, that many daies passed, which Lothario did willingly overslip, and said nothing to Camila, yet did he ever soothe Anselmo, and told him, that hee had spoken to her, but could never win her to give the least argument of flexibilitie, or make way for the feeblest hope that might be: but rather affirmed that shee threatned him, that if hee did not repell his impertinent desires, she would detect his indirect proceedings to her husband. It is well quoth Anselmo. Hitherto Camila hath resisted words, it is therefore requisite to trie what resistance she will make against works. I will give thee to morrow foure thousand crownes in gold, to the end thou maist offer, and also bestow them on her: and thou shalt have as many more to buy Jewels, wherewithall to baite her: for women are naturally inclined, and specially if they be faire (be they ever so chaste) to goe brave and gorgeously attired, and if shee can overcome this temptation, I will remaine pleased, and put thee to no more trouble. Lothario answered, that seeing he had begun, he would beare his enterprise on to an end, although he made full account, that he should depart from the conflict, both tyred and vanquished. He receaved the foure thousand crownes the next day, and at once with them foure thousand perplexities, for he knew not what to invent, to lie a new; but concluded finally to tell to his friend how Camila was as inflexible at gifts and promises as at words, and therefore it would be in vaine to travaile any more in her pursuite, seeing he should doe nothing else but spend the time in vaine.

But fortune, which guided these affaires in another manner, so disposed, that Anselmo having left Lothario and Camila alone as he was wont, entred secretly into a chamber, and thorow the crannies and chinks did listen and see what they would doe: where he perceaved that Lothario in the space of halfe an houre, spoke not a word to Camila, nor yet would he have spoken though hee had remained there a whole age, and thereupon surmised straight, that all that which his friend had told him of Camilas answeres and his

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

owne speech were but fictions and untruthes: and that hee might the more confirme himselfe, and see whether it were so, he came forth and calling Lothario apart, he demaunded of him what Camila had said, and in what humor shee was at the present? Lothario answered that he meant not ever any more to sound her in that matter, for shee replied to him so untowardly and sharply, as he durst not attempt any more to speake unto her of such things. O, quoth Anselmo, Lothario, Lothario, how evill dost thou answeare to the affection thou owest mee, or to the confidence I did repose in thee? I have stood beholding thee all this while through the hole of that locke, and saw how thou never spokest one word to her. Whereby I doe also collect, that thou hast not yet once accosted her: and if it be so, as doubtlesly it is, say, why dost thou deceave me? or why goest thou about fraudulently to deprive me of those meanes, whcreby I may obtaine my desires? Anselmo said no more, yet what he said was sufficient to make Lothario confused and ashamed, who taking it to be a blemish to his reputation to bee found in a lie, swore to Anselmo, that hee would from thence forward so indeavour to please his minde, and tell him no more leasings, as hee himselfe might perceave the successe thereof, if he did again curiously lye in watch for him: a thing which hee might well excuse, because his most serious labour to satisfie his desire, should remoove all shadow of suspicion. Anselmo beleeved him, and that he might give him the greater commodity, and lesse occasion of feare, he resolved to absent himselfe from his house some eight daies, and goe to visit a friend of his, that dwelled in a Village not farre from the Cittie, and therefore dealt with his friend that he should send a messenger to call for him very earnestly, that under that pretext, he might finde an excuse to Camila for his departure.

O infortunate and inconsiderate Anselmo, what is that which thou doest? what doest thou contrive? or what is that thou goest about? behold, thou workest thine owne ruine, laying plots of thine owne dishonour, and giving order to thy proper perdition. Thy wife Camila is good, thou dost possesse her in quiet and peaceable manner, no man

CHAPTER
VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie or
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent

surpriseth thy delights, her thoughts transgrese not the limits of her house. Thou art her heaven on earth, and the goale to which her desires aspire. Thou art the accomplishment and summe of her delectation, thou art the squire by which shee measureth and directeth her will, adjusting wholy with thine and with that of heaven. Since then the mines of her honour, beautie, modestie, and recollection, bountifully afford thee without any toile, all the treasures contained in them, or thou canst desire, why wouldest thou digge the earth, and seeke out new vaines, and new seene treasures, exposing thy selfe to the danger, that thy labours may turne to wracke, seeing in fine, that they are only sustained by the weake supporters of her fraile nature? remember how he that seekes the impossible, may justly bee refused of that which is possible, according unto that which the Poet saith :

In death for life I seeke,
Health in infirmitie :
For issue in a dungeon deepe :
In jayles for libertie,
And in a treachour loyaltie.
But envious fate, which still
Conspires to worke mine ill,
With Heaven hath thus decreed ;
That easie things should be to me denide,
'Cause I crave th' impossible.

Anselmo departed the next day following to the Village, telling Camila at his departure, that whilst hee were absent, his friend Lothario would come and see to the affaires of his house, and to eate with her, and desired her therefore, to make as much of him, as she would doe of his owne person. Camila like a discreet and modest woman, was grieved at the order her husband did give to her, and requested him to render how indecent it was that any one should possesse the chaire of his table, he being absent, and if hee did it, as doubting her insufficiencie, to manage his houshold affaires, that at least he should make triall of her that one time, and should clearely perceive how she was able to discharge matters of farre greater consequence. Anselmo replyed, that what hee commanded, was his pleasure, and therefore shee had nothing

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

else to doe, but hold downe the head, and obay it. Camila answered, that shee would do so, although it was very much against her will. In fine her husband departed, and Lothario came the next day following to the house, where hee was entertained by Camila very friendly, but would never treate with Lothario alone, but evermore was compassed by her servant and waiting Maidens, but chiefly by one called Leonela, whom shee loved dearely; as one that had beeene brought up with her in her Fathers house, even from their infancie, and when shee did marry Anselmo, shee brought her from thence in her company.

The first three dayes Lothario spoke not a word, although he might, when the tables were taken up, and that the folke of the house went hastily to dinner, for so Camila had commanded, and did give Leonela order besides to dine before her selfe, and that shee should still keepe by her side: but the gyrtle which had her fancie otherwise imployed in thinges more pleasing her humour, and needed those houres and times for the accomplishing of them, did not alwaies accomplish so punctually her Ladies command, but now and then would leave her alone, as if that were her Ladies behest. But the honest presence of Camila, the gravitie of her face, and the modestie of her carriage was such, as it served as a bridle to restraine Lotharios tongue. But the benefit of Camilas many vertues, setting silence to Lotharios speech, resulted afterward to both their harmes. For though the tongue spoke not, yet did his thoughts discourse, and had leasure afforded them to contemplate, part by part, all the extremes of worth and beautie that were cumulated in Camila, potent to inflame a statue of frozen Marble: how much more an heart of flesh. Lothario did only behold her in the time and space he should speake unto her, and did then consider how worthy shee was to be loved. And this consideration did by little and little give assaults to the respects which he ought to have borne towards his friepd Anselmo: a thousand times did hee determine to absent him-selfe from the Cittie, and goe where Anselmo should never see him, nor hee Camila, but the delight hee tooke in beholding her did againe with-hold and hinder his resolutions. When

CHAPTER
VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

VI

Wherein is
rehearsed the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent.

hee was alone, he would condemne himselfe of his madde
designe, and tearme himselfe a badde friend and worse Chris-
tian, hee made discourses and comparisons betweene himselfe
and Anselmo, all which did finish in this point that Anselmo's
foolhardinesse, and madnesse, was greater, then his owne in-
fidelitie, and that if hee might bee as easily excused before
God, for that he meant to doe, as he would be before men,
he needed not to feare any punishment should bee inflicted
on him for the crime: finally, Camilas beautie and worths,
assisted by the occasion, which the ignorant husband had
thrust into his fists, did wholly ruine and overthrow Lothario
his loyaltie, and therefore without regarding any other thing
then that to which his pleasure conducted him, about a
three dayes after Anselmos departure (which time he had
spent in a continuall battaile and resistance of his contend-
ing thoughts) he beganne to solicite Camila, with such
trouble of the spirits, and so amorous wordes, as she was
strucken almost beside her selfe with wonder, and made him
no other answere, but arising from the table, flung away in a
furie into her chamber. But yet for all this drines, Lothario
his hope (which is wont evermore to bee borne at once
with love) was nothing dismayed, but rather accounted the
more of Camila, who perceiving that in Lothario, which
she never durst before to imagine, knew not what she might
doe; but it seeming unto her to be a thing neither secure
nor honest, to give him occasion or leisure to speake unto
him againe, determined to send one unto her husband
Anselmo the same very night, as indeed she did, with
a letter to recal him home to her house. The
subject of her Letter was this.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is prosecuted the History of the
curious impertinent.



VEN as it is commonly said, that an Armie
' seemes not well without a Generall, or
' a Castle without a Constable, so doe I
' affirme, that it is much more indecent
' to see a young married woman without
' her husband, when he is not justly de-
' tained away by necessarie affaires. I
' finde my selfe so ill-disposed in your
' absence, and so impatient and impotent to indure it longer,
' as if you doe not speedily returne, I shall be constrained
' to returne backe unto my father, although I should leave
' your house without any keeping. For the guard you ap-
' pointed for me, if it be so that hee may deserve that title,
' lookes more I beleeve to his owne pleasure, then to that
' which concernes you, therefore seeing you have wit enough,
' I will say no more, nor ought I to say more in reason.'

Anselmo received the Letter, and by it understood that Lothario had begun the enterprize, and that Camila had answered to him according as he had hoped : and marvellous glad at the newes, he answered his wife by word of mouth, that she should not remoove in any wise from her house, for he would returne with all speed. Camila was greatly admired at his answer, which struck her into a greater perplexitie then she was at the first, being affraid to stay at home, and also to go to her father. For by staying, she indangers her honesty, by going, she should transgresse her husbands commaund : at last she resolved to do that which was worst, which was to remaine at home, and not to shunne Lotharios presence, lest she should give her servants occasion of suspition : and now she was grieved to have written what she did to her husband, fearefull lest he should thinke

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

that Lothario had noted in her some token of lightnesse, which might have moved him to lose the respect which otherwise was due unto her: but confident in her innocency, she cast her hopes in God and her good thoughts, wherewithall shee thought to resist all Lotharios words, and by holding her silent without making him any answere, without giving any further account of the matter to her husband, lest thereby she might plunge him in new difficulties and contention with his friend, and did therefore bethinke her how shee might excuse Lothario to Anselmo, when he should demand the occasion that moved her to write unto him that Letter. With these more honest then profitable or discrete resolutions, she gave care the second day to Lothario, who charged her with such resolution, as her constancy beganne to stagger, and her honesty had enough to doe, recurring to her eyes to containe them, lest they should give any demonstration of the amorous compassion which Lotharios wordes and teares had stirred in her brest. Lothario noted all this, and it inflamed him the more. Finally, he thought that it was requisite the time and leisure which Anselmoes absence affoorded him, to lay closer siege to that Fortresse: and so he assaulted her presumptiuously with the praises of her beauty; for there is nothing which with such facility doth render and raze to the ground the proudly-crested Turrets of womens vanity, then the same vanity being dilated on by the tongue of adulation and flattery. To be briefe, he did with all diligence undermine the rocke of her integrity with so warlike engines, as although Camila were made of brasse, yet would she be overthowrne. For Lothario wept, intreated, promised, flattered, persisted and fained so feelingly, and with such tokens of truth, as traversing Camilas care of her honour, he came in the end to triumph over that which was least suspected, and he most desired: for she rendred her selfe, even Camila rendred her selfe. But what wonder if Lotharioes amitie could not stand on foote? A cleere example, plainly demonstrating that the amorous passion is onely vanquished by shunning it; and that no body ought to adventure to wrestle with so strong an adversarie: for

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

heavenly forces are necessarie for him that would confront the violence of that passion, although humane. None but Leonela knew the weakenesse of her Ladie, for from her the two bad friends and new lovers could not conceale the matter: nor yet would Lothario discover to Camila her husbands pretence, or that he had given him wittingly the oportunity whereby he arrived to that passe, because she should not imagine that he had gotten her lightly, and by chance, and did not purposely sollicite her.

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

A few dayes after Anselmo arrived to his house, and did not perceive what wanted therein, to wit, that which it had lost, and he most esteemed. From thence he went to see his friend Lothario, whom he found at home, and embracing one another, he demanded of him the newes of his life or of his death. The newes which I can give thee, friend Anselmo, quoth Lothario, are, that thou hast a wife, who may deservedly be the example and garland of all good women. The words that I spoke unto her, were spent on the ayre, my proffers contemned, and my gifts repulsed, and besides, she hath mockt me notably for certaine fained teares that I did shed. In resolution, even as Camila is the patterne of all beauty, so is she a treasury wherein modesty resides, courtesie and wariness dwell, and all the other vertues that may beautifie an honourable woman, or make her fortunate. Therefore friend take backe thy money, for here it is ready, and I never had occasion to employ it: for Camila's integritie cannot be subdued with so base things as are gifts and promises. And Anselmo content thy selfe now with the proofes made already, without attempting to make any farther triall. And seeing thou hast past over the Sea of difficulties and suspitions with a drie foote, which may and are wont to be had of women: doe not eftsoones enter into the profound depthes of new inconveniences, nor take thou any other Pilot to make experiance of the goodnessse and strength of the vessell that heaven hath allotted to thee, to passe therein through the Seas of this world: but make account that thou art harbourred in a safe haven, and there hold thy selfe fast with the Anchors of good consideration, and so rest thee untill death come to demaund his

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

debt, from the payment whereof no Nobility or priviledge whatsoever can exempt us. Anselmo rested singularly satisfied at Lotharios discourse, and did beleeve it as firmly as if it were delivered by an Oracle; but did intreat him notwithstanding to prosecute his attempt, although it were onely done for curiositie, and to passe away the time; yet not to use so efficacious meanes, as he thitherto practised: and that he only desired him to write some verses in her praise, under the name of Clori, for hee would make Camila beleeve, how that he was inamoured of a certaine Lady, to whom he did appropriate that name, that hee might celebrate her praises with the respect due to her honour: and that if he would not take the paynes to invent them, that he himselfe would willingly compose them. That is not needfull, quoth Lothario, for the Muses are not so alienated from me, but that they visite mee sometimes in the yeare. Tell you unto Camila what you have devised of my loves: and as for the verses, I will make them my selfe, if not so well as the subject deserves, yet at the least as artificially as I may devise them. The impertinent curious man and his treacherous friend having thus agreed, and Anselmo returned to his house, he demaunded of Camila that which shee maruelled he had not asked before, that shee should tell unto him the occasion why shee sent unto him the Letter? Camila made answere, because it seemed unto her, that Lothario beheld her somewhat more immodestly then when he was at home; but that now she did againe disswade her selfe, and beleieved that it was but a light surmise, without any ground, because that she perceived Lothario to loath her presence, or be by any meanes alone with her. Anselmo tolde her that she might very well live secure for him, for that he knew Lotharios affections were bestowed else-where, and that upon one of the noblest damzels of the Citie, whose praises he solemnized under the name of Clori, and that although he were not, yet was there no cause to doubt of Lotharios vertue, or the amitie that was betweene them both. Here if Camila had not beene premonished by Lothario, that the love of Clori was but fained, and that he himselfe had told it to Anselmo to blinde him, that he might with lesse diffi-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

cultie celebrate her owne praises under the name of Clori, shee had without doubt falne into the desperate toyles of jealousie ; but being already advertised, she posted over that assault lightly. The day following they three sitting together at dinner, Anselmo requested Lothario to repeate some one of the verses that he had made to his beloved Clori ; for seeing that Camila knew her not, he might boldly say what he pleased. Although she knew her, quoth Lothario, yet would I not therefore suppresse any part of her praises. For when any Lover praiseth his Ladie for her beauty, and doth withall taxe her of cruelty, her credit incurres no danger. But befall what it list, I composed yesterday a Sonnet of the ingratitude of Clori, and is this ensuing :

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

A Sonnet.

Amidst the silence of the darkest night,
When sweetest sleepe invadeth mortall eyes :
I poore account, to heav'n and Clori bright,
Give of the richest harmes, which ever rise.
And at the time, we Phœbus may devise,
Shine through the Roseall gates of th' Orient bright,
With deepe accents, and sighes in wonted guise
I doe my plaints renew, with maine and might.
And when the Sunne, downe from his starry seat
Directest rayes, towards the earth doth send,
My sighes I double and my sad regrete.
And night returnes, but of my woes no end :
For I finde alwaies in my mortall strife,
Heav'n without eares, and Clori likewise deafe.

Camila liked the Sonnet very well, but Anselmo best of all ; for he praised it, and said, that the Lady must be very cruell, that would not answer such perspicuous truths, with reciprocall affection. But then Camila answered, Why then belike all that which inamoured Poets say is true ? In as much as Poets, quoth Lothario, they say not truth : but as they are inamoured, they remaine as short as they are true. That is questionlesse, quoth Anselmo, all to underprop and give Lothario more credite with Camila, who was as carelesse of the cause her husband said so, as she was enamoured

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent

of Lothario, and therefore with the delight she tooke in his compositions, but chiefly knowing that his desires and labors were address to her selfe, who was the true Clori, she intreated him to repeate some other Sonnet or Dittie, if he remembred any. Yes that I doe, quoth Lothario, but I beleeve that it is not so good as the first, as you may well judge, for it is this :

A Sonnet.

I die, and if I cannot be beleev'd,
My death's more certaine, as it is most sure,
To see me at thy feet, of life depriv'd :
Rather then grieve, this thraldome to endure,
Well may I in oblivious shades obscure
Of glory, life, and favour be denide :
And yet even there, shall in my bosome pure,
The shape of thy faire face ingrat'd be eyed.
For that's a relique, which I doe reserve
For the last traunces, my contentions threaten,
Which midst thy rigour doth it selfe preserve.
O woe's the wight, that is by tempests beaten
By night, in unknowne Seas, in danger rife,
For want of North, or haven to lose his life!

Anselmo commended also this second Sonnet as hee had done the first, and added by that meanes one linke to another in the chaine, wherewith he intangled himselfe, and forged his owne dishonour : seeing when Lothario dishonoured him most of all, he said unto him then that he honored him most. And herewithall Camila made all the linkes, that verily served onely to abase her downe to the Center of contempt, seeme to mount her in her husbands opinion, up to the height of vertue and good fame.

¶ It befell soone after, that Camila finding her selfe alone with her mayden, said to her, I am ashamed, friend Leonela, to see how little I knew to value my self, seeing that I made not Lothario spend some time at least in the purchasing the whole possession of mee, which I with a prompt will bestowed upon him so speedily. I feare mee that he will impute my hastinesse to lightnesse, without considering the force he used towards mee, which wholly hindred and disabled my

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

resistance. Let not that afflict you, Madam, quoth Leonela, for it is no sufficient cause to diminish estimation, that, that bee given quickly which is to be given, if that in effect be good that is given, and be in it selfe worthy of estimation ; for it is an old proverbe, 'That hee that gives quickly, gives twice.' It is also said as well, quoth Camila, 'That which costeth little, is lesse esteemed.' That reason hath no place in you quoth Leonela, for as much as love, according as some have said of it, doth sometimes flie, other times it goes, it runs with this man, and goes leasurely with the other ; it makes some key-cold, and inflames others, some it wounds, and some it kils, it begins the Carrire of his desires in an instant, and in the very same, concludes it likewise: It is wont to lay siege to the fortresse in the morning, and at night it makes it to yeelde ; for ther's no force able to resist it : which being so, what doe you wonder, or what is it that you feare ? If the same hath befalne Lothario, seeing that love made of my Lords absence an instrument to vanquish us ? and it was forcible, that in it we should conclude on it which love had before determined, without giving time it selfe any time, to leade Anselmo that he might returne, and with his presence leave the worke imperfect. For love hath none so officious or better a minister to execute his desires then is occasion : It serves it selfe of occasion in all his act, but most of all at the beginning. And all this that I have said, I know rather by experience then hearsay : as I will some day let you to understand : for Madam, I am likewise made of flesh, and lustie yong bloud. And as for you Ladie, Camila, you did not give up and yeelde your selfe presently, but stayed until you had first seene in Lotharios eyes, his sighes in his discourses, in his promises and gifts all his soule, in which and in his perfections, you might read how worthy he is to be loved. And seeing this is so, let not these scruples and nice thoughts assault or further disturbe your mind, but perswade your selfe that Lothario esteemes you as much as you doe him, and lives with content and satisfaction, seeing that it was your fortune to fal into the amorous snare, that it was his good luck to catch you with his valour and

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [L.R.]

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
pronounced
the History
of the curious
impertinent

deserts : who not only hath the soure S.S. which they say every good Lover ought to have, but also the whole A.B.C. which if you will not credite, doe but listen to me a while, and I will repeate it to you by roate. He is as it seemes, and as farre as I can judge, amiable, bountifull, courteous, dutifull, enamored, firme, gallant, honorable, illustrious, loyall, wilde, noble, honest, prudent, quiet, rich, and the S.S. which they say, and besides true, valorous. The X. doth not quader well with him, because it sounds harshly : Y. he is Yong. And the Z. he is zealous of thine honour. Camila laughed at her maydens A.B.C. and accounted her to bee more practicke in love-matters, then she her selfe had confessed, as indeed she was, for then she revealed to her Mistresse, how she and a certaine young man well borne of the Citie did treate of love one with another : Hereat her Mistresse was not a little troubled in minde, fearing that her honour might be greatly indangered by that meanes; she demanded whether her affections had passed farther then words, and the maide answered very shamelealy and freely that they did : for it is most certaine, that this kinde of wretchlease Mistresses doe also make their maydens carelese and impudent : who when they perceive their Ladies to faulter, are commonly wont to hault likewise themselves, and care not that the world doe know it. Camila seeing this error past remedie, could doe no more but intreat Leonela, not to reveale any thing of her affaires to him she said was her sweet heart ; and that she should handle her matters discreetly and secretly, lest they might come to Anselmo or Lothario's notice. Leonela promised to performe her wil, but did accomplish her promise in such sort, as she did confirme Camilas feares, that she should lose her credit by her meanes. For the dishonest and bold Gyrle after that shee had perceived that her Mistres her proceedings were not such as they were wont, grew so hardy, as shee gave entrance, and brought her lover into her Maisters house, presuming that although her Ladie knew it, yet would she not dare to discover it. For this among other harmes follow the sinnes of Mistresses, that it makes them slaves to their owne servants, and doth oblige them to conceale their dis-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

honest and base proceedings, as it fell out in Camila, who, although she espied Leonela not once onely, but sundry times together with her lover in a certaine chamber of the house, she not onely dared not to rebuke her for it, but rather gave her oportunity to hide him, and would remove all occasions out of her husbands way, whereby he might suspect any such thing.

CHAPTER
VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious

But all could not hinder Lothario from espying him once, as he departed out of the house at the break of the day: who not knowing him, thought at the first that it was a spirit, but when he saw him post away, and cast his cloake over his face, lest he should be knowne, he abandoning his simple surmise, fell into a new suspicion which had overthrowne them all, were it not that Camila did remedie it. For Lothario thought, that he whom he had seene issue out of Anselmos house at so unreasonable an houre, had not entred into it for Leonelas sake, nor did he remember then that there was such a one as Leonela in the world, but onely thought that as Camila was lightly gotten by him, so belike she was wonne by some other. For the wickednesse of a bad woman bringeth usually all these additions, that she loseth her reputation even with him to whom prayed and perswaded shee yeeldeth her selfe: and he beleeveth that shee will as easily, or with more facility consent to others, and doth infallibly credit the least suspicion which thereof may be offered.

And it seemes that Lothario in this instant was wholy deprived of all reasonable discourse, and quite dispoyled of his understanding, for without pondering of the matter, impatient and kindled by the jealous rage that inwardly gnawed his bowels, fretting with desire to be revenged on Camila, who had never offended him, he came to Anselmo before he was up, and said to him: know, Anselmo, that I have had these many daies a civill conflict within my selfe whether I should speak or no, and I have used as much violence as I might, to my selfe, not to discover a thing unto you, which now it is neither just nor reasonable I should conceale. Know that Camilas fortresse is rendred, and subject to all that I please to commaund, and if I have

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

beene somewhat slow to informe thee this of truth, it was because I would first see, whether it proceeded of some light appetite in her: or whether shee did it to trie me, and see whether that love was still constantly continued, which I first began to make unto her by thy order and licence. I did also beleeve, that if she had beeene such as she ought to bee, and her that we both esteemed her, she would have by this time acquainted you with my importunacy: but seeing that she lingers therein, I presume that her promises made unto mee are true, that when you did again absent yourselfe out of the towne, she would speake with mee in the wardrobe (and it was true, for there Camila was accustomed to talke with him) yet would not I have thee runne rashly to take revenge, seeing the sinne is not yet otherwise committed then in thought, and perhaps betweene this and the oportunity she might hope to put it in execution, her mind would be changed, and she repent her selfe of her folly. And therefore seeing that thou hast ever followed mine advises partly or wholy, follow and keepe one counsell that I will give unto thee now, to the end that thou mayest after with carefull assurance, and without fraud, satisfie thine own will as thou likest best: faine thy selfe to be absent two or three daies as thou art wont, and then convey thy selfe cunningly into the wardrobe, where thou maist very well hide thy selfe behind the Tapestry, and then thou shalt see with thine owne eyes, and I with mine what Camila will doe; and if it be that wickednesse which rather ought to be feared then hoped for, thou maiest with wisedome, silence, and discretion bee the proper executioner of so injurious a wrong.

Anselmo remained amazed, and almost besides himselfe, hearing his friend Lothario so unexpectedly to acquaint him with those things, in a time wherein he least expected them, for now hee esteemed Camila to have escaped victresse from the forged assaults of Lothario, and did himselfe triumph for glorie of her victorie: suspended thus and troubled, he stood silent a great while looking on the earth, without once removing his eye from it; and finally, turning towards his friend, he said. Lothario, thou hast

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

done all that which I could expect from so intire amitie, and I do therfore meane to follow thine advice in all things precisely: doe therefore what thou pleasest, and keep that secret which is requisite in so waighty and unexpected an event. Or that I do promise, quoth Lothario: and so departed wholly repented for what hee had told to Anselmo, seeing how foolishly hee had proceeded, since hee might have revenged himselfe on Camila very well, without taking a way so cruell and dishonorable. There did he curse his little wit; and abased his light resolution, and knewe not what means to use to destroy what he had done, or give it some reasonable and contrary issue. In the end hee resolved to acquaint Camila with the whole matter, and by reason that he never missed of oportunitie to speak unto her, he found her alone the very same day; and shee seeing likewise that shee had fit time to speake unto him, said. Know friend Lothario, that a certaine thing doth pinch my heart in such manner, as it seemes ready to burst in my brest, as doubtlesly I feare me that in time it will, if we cannot set a remedie to it. For such is the immodeſtie of Leonela, as shee shuts up a lover of hers every night in this house, and remaines with him untill day light, which so much concernes my credit, as it leaves open a spacious field to him, that sees the other goe out of my house at so unseasonable times, to judge of me what he pleaseth; and that which most grieves mee, is, that I dare not punish or rebuke her for it. For shee being privie to our proceedings sets a bridle on me, and constraines me to conceale hers; and hence, I feare me will bad successe befall us. Lothario at the first suspected that Camila did speake thus to make him beleieve that the man whom he had espied was Leonela's friend, and none of hers: but seeing her to weepe indeede and bee greatly afflicted in minde, he began at last to give credit unto the truth, and beleeving it, was greatly confounded and grieved for that he had done. And yet notwithstanding hee answered Camila that shee should not trouble or vexe her selfe any more, for he would take such order, as Leonelas impudencies should be easily croſt and suppressed. And then did recount unto her all that hee had

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

said to Anselmo, spurd on by the furious rage of jealous indignation, and how her husband had agreed to hide himself behind the tapestrie of the wardrobe, that he might from thence clearely perceive the little loyaltie shee kept towards him, and demanded pardon of her for that folly and counsaile to redresse it, and come safely out of the intricate Labyrinth, whereinto his weake-eyed discourse had conducted him.

Camila having heard Lothario's discourse, was afraid and amazed, and with great anger, and many and discreet reasons did rebuke him, reviling the basenesse of his thoughts, and the simple and little consideration that hee had. But as women have naturally a suddaine wit, for good or bad, much more prompt then men: although when indeed they would make discourses, it proves defective. So Camila found in an instant a remedy for an affaire in appearance so irremediable and helplesse, and therefore bade Lothario to induce his friend Anselmo to hide himselfe the next day ensuing, for shee hoped to take commodity out of his being there, for them both to joy one another with more securitie then ever they had before: and without wholly manifesting her proverbe to him, shee only advertised him to have care, that after Anselmo were hidden, he should presently come when Leonela called for him, and that he should answer her as directly to every question shee proposed, as if Anselmo were not in place. Lothario did urge her importunately to declare her designe unto him, to the end hee might with more security and advice observe all that was necessarie. I say, quoth Camila, there is no other observance to bee had, then only to answere me directly to what I shall demaund. For she would not give him account beforehand of her determination, fearefull that he would not conforme himselfe to her opinion which she tooke to bee so good; or else least he would follow or seeke any other, that would not prove after so well. Thus departed Lothario, and Anselmo, under pretext that hee would visit his friend out of Towne departed, and returned covertly back againe to hide himselfe, which hee could do the more commodiously, because Camila and Leonela did purposely

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

afford him oportunitie. Anselmo, having hidden himselfe, with the grieve that may bee imagined one would conceive, who did expect to see with his owne eyes an anotomie made of the bowels of his honour, and was in danger to lose the highest felicitie that hee accounted himselfe to possesse in his beloved Camila: Camila and Leonela being certaine that he was hidden within the wardrobe, entred into it, wherein scarce had Camila set her foote, when breathing forth of a deepe sigh shee spoke in this manner:

Ah friend Leonela were it not better, that before I put in execution, that which I would not have thee to know, lest thou shouldest indeavour to hinder it, that thou takest Anselmos poyniard that I have sought of thee, and passe this infamous brest of mine through and through? but doe it not, for it is no reason that I should suffer for other mens faults. I will know first of all what the bold and dishonest eyes of Lothario noted in me that should stirre in him the presumption to discover unto me so unlawfull a desire, as that which hee hath revealed, so much in contempt of his friend, and to my dishonour. Stand at that window Leonela, and call him to mee, for I doe infallibly beleeve, that hee stands in the streeete awyting to effect his wicked purpose. But first my cruell, yet honorable minde shall be first performed. Alas, deare Madame (quoth the wise and craftie Leonela) what is it you meane to doe with that poyniard? Meane you perhaps to deprive either your owne or Lotharios life therewithall? for which soever of these things you do, shall redound to the losse of your credit and fame. It is much better that you dissemble your wrong, and give no occasion to the bad man now to enter into this house, and find us here in it alone: Consider good Madame how we are but weake women, and hee is a man, and one resolute, and by reason that he comes blinded by his bad and passionate intent hee may peradventure before thou beest able to put thine in execution, doe somewhat that would bee worse for you, then to deprive you of your life. Evill befall my Mr. Anselmo, that ministers so great occasion to impudencie, thus to discover her visage in our

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER
VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

house: and if you should kill him by chance Madame, as I suspect you meane to doe, what shall we doe after with the dead carkasse? What? said Camila, we would leave him heere that Anselmo might burie him. For he must in all equitie esteeme that labour for ease, which hee shall passe, in the interring of his owne infamie. Make an end then, and call him, for mee thinkes that all the time which I spend untaking due revenge of my just disdaine, turnes into the prejudice of the loyaltie which I owe to my spouse.

Anselmo listned very attentively all the while, and at every word that Camila said, his thoughts changed. But when he understood that shee was resolved to kill Lothario, he was about to come out and discover himselfe, to the end that such a thing should not be done, but the desire that hee had to see wherein so brave and honest a resolution would end, with-held him, determining then to sallie out, when his presence should be needfull to hinder it. Camila about this time beganne to bee very weake and dismayed, and casting her selfe, as if she had falne into a trance upon a bed that was in the roome, Leonela began to lament very bitterly and to say. Alas, wretch that I am, how unfortunate should I be, if the flower of the worlds honestie, the crowne of good women, and the patterne of chastitie, should die here betweene my hands. Those and such other things shee said so dolefully, as no one could heare her, that would not deeme her to bee one of the most esteemed and loyall Damzels of the world: and take her Ladie for an other new and persecuted Penelope. Soone after Camila returned to her selfe, and said presently. Why goest thou not Leonela to call the most disloyall friend of a friend, that ever the Sunne beheld, or the night concealed? Make an end, runne, make hast, and let not the fire of my choller bee through thy stay consumed and spent, nor the just revenge, which I hope to take passe over in threats or maledictions. I goe to call him Madame quoth Leonela, but first of all you must give me that poyniard, lest you should doe with it in mine absence somewhat, that would minister occasions to us your friends to deplore you all the dayes of

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

our lives. Goe away boldly friend Leonela said Camila, for I shall doe nothing in thine absence ; for although I be in thine opinion both simple and bold enough to turne for mine honor, yet meane I not to be so much as the celebrated Lucretia, of whom it is recorded that she slew her selfe, without having committed any error or slaine him first who was the principal cause of her disgrace : I will die if I must needes die, but I will be satisfied and revenged on him that hath given me occasion to come into this place to lament his boldnesse, sprung without my default. Leonela could scarcely be intreated to go and call Lothario ; but at last she went out, and in the meane time Camila remained, speaking to her selfe these words : Good God, had not it beene more discretion to have dismissed Lothario, as I did many times before, then thus to possesse him as I have done, with an opinion that I am an evill and dishonest woman, at least all the while that passeth, untill mine actes shall undeceive him, and teach him the contrary ? It had beene doubtlesly better : but then should not I be revenged, nor mine husbands honour satisfied, if he were permitted to beare away so cleerely his malignitie, or escape out of the snare wherein his wicked thoughts involved him. Let the Traytor pay with his lifes defrayment, that which he attempted with so lascivious a desire. Let the world know (if it by chance shal come to know it) that Camila did not only conserve the loyaltie due to her Lord, but also tooke revenge of the intended spoile thereof. But yet I beleeve that it were best to give Anselmo first notice thereof ; but I did already touch it to him in the Letter which I wrote to him to the Village : and I beleeve that his not concurring to take order in this so manifest an abuse, proceeds of his too sincere and good meaning, which would not, nor cannot beleeve, that the like kind of thought could ever finde intertainment in the breast of so firme a friend, tending so much to his dishonour : and what marvell, if I my self could not credit it for a great many daies together, nor would I ever have thought it, if his insolency had not arrived to that passe, which the manifest gifts, large promises, and continual teares hee shed doe give testimony.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

But why doe I make now these discourses? Hath a gallant resolution perhaps any neede of advice? No verily; therefore avaunt treacherous thoughts, here we must use revenge. Let the false man come in, arrive, die and end, and let after befall what can befall. I entred pure and untouched to his possession, whom heaven bestowed on mee for mine, and I will depart from him purely: and if the worst befall, I shall onely be defiled by mine owne chaste bloud, and the impure gore of the falsest friend that ever amitie saw in this world. And saying of this, shee praunced up and downe the roome with the poyniard naked in her hand, with such long and unmeasurable strides, and making withal such gestures, as she rather seemed defective of wit, and a desperate ruffian, then a delicate woman.

All this Anselmo perceived very well from behinde the Arras that coverd him; which did not a little admire him, and he thought that what he had seene and heard, was a sufficient satisfaction of far greater suspitions then he had: and could have wished with all his heart, that the triall of Lotharios comming might be excused, fearing greatly some sudden bad successe: and as hee was ready to manifest himselfe, and to come out and embrace and diss Wade his wife; he withdrew himselfe, because he saw Leonela returne, bringing Lothario in by the hand, and as soone as Camila beheld him, she drew a great stroke with the point of the poyniard athwart the wardrop, saying, Lothario, note well what I meane to say unto thee: for if by chance thou beest so hardy as to passe over this line which thou seest, ere I come as farre as it, I will in the very same instant stabbe my selfe into the heart with this poyniard, which I hold in my hand: and before thou doest speake or answer me any word, I would first have thee to listen to a few of mine, for after thou maiest say what thou pleasest. First of all I would have thee, O Lothario, to say whether thou knowest my husband Anselmo, and what opinion thou hast of him? And next I would have thee to tell me if thou knowest my selfe? Answer to this without delay, nor do not stand long thinking on what thou art to answe, seeing they are no deepe questions which I propose unto thee. Lothario was

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

not so ignorant, but that from the very beginning when Camila requested him to perswade her husband to hide himself behinde the tapistry, he had not falne on the drift of her invention, and therefore did answere her intention so aptly and discreetly, as they made that untruth passe betweene them for a more then manifest verity: and so he answered to Camila in this forme, I did never conjecture, beautifull Camila, that thou wouldest have called me here to demaund of me things so wide from the purpose for which I come: if thou doest it to deferre yet the promised favour, thou mightest have intartained it yet farther off, for the good desired affliceth so much the more, by how much the hope to possesse it is neere. But because thou mayest not accuse me for not answering to thy demaunds, I say that I know thy husband Anselmo, and both of us know one another even from our tender infancie, and I will not omit to say that, which thou also knowest of our amity, to make me thereby a witnesse against my selfe of the wrong which love compels me to doe unto him, yet love is a sufficient excuse and excuser of greater errors then are mine. Thee doe I likewise know and hold in the same possession that he doth: for were it not so, I should never have beene won by lesse perfections then thine, to transgresse so much that which I owe to my selfe, and to the holy lawes of true amitie, now broken and violated by the tyrannie of so powerfull an adversary as love hath proved. If thou dost acknowledge that, replied Camila, O mortall enemy of all that which justly deserveth love, with what face darest thou then appeare before that which thou knowest to bee the mirror wherein he lookest, in whom thou also oughtest to behold thy selfe, to the end thou mightest perceive upon how little occasion thou dost wrong him? but unfortunate that I am, I fall now in the reason which hath moved thee to make so little account of thine owne duety, which was perhaps some negligent or light behaviour of mine, which I will not call dishonesty, seeing that as I presume, it hath not proceeded from me deliberately, but rather through the carelesnes that women which thinke they are not noted, do sometimes unwittingly commit. If not, say, traytor,

CHAPTER
VII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

when did I ever answer thy prayers with any word or token, that might awake in thee the least shadow of hope to accomplish thine infamous desires? When were not thine amorous intreaties reprehended and dispersed by the roughnesse and rigour of mine answers? When were thy many promises and larger gifts ever beleeved or admitted? But for as much as I am perswaded that no man can persevere long time in the amorous contention, who hath not beene sustayned by some hope, I will attribute the fault of thine impertinence to my selfe: for doubtlesly some carelesnesse of mine hath hitherto sustained thy care, and therefore I will chastise and give to my selfe the punishment which thy fault deservesth. And because thou mightest see that I being so inhumane towards my selfe, could not possibly be other then cruell to thee, I thought fit to call thee to be a witnesse of the sacrifice which I meane to make to the offended honor of my most honourable husband, tainted by thee, with the blackest note that thy malice could devise, and by me, through the negligence that I used, to shun the occasion, if I gave thee any, thus to nourish and canonize thy wicked intentions. I say againe, that the suspition I have, that my little regard hath engendred in thee these distracted thoughts, is that which afflicteth me most, and that which I meane to chastise most with mine owne hands: for if another executioner punished me, then should my crime become more notorious; but before I doe this, I dying will kill, and carie him away with me, that shall end and satisfie the greedy desire of revenge which I hope for, and I have; seeing before mine eyes wheresoever I shal go, the punishment which disingaged justice shall inflict, it still remayning unbowed or suborned by him, which hath brought me to so desperate termes.

And having said these words, she flew upon Lothario with incredible force and lightnesse, and her poyniard naked, giving such arguments and tokens that shee meant to stabbe him, as he himselfe was in doubt whether her demonstrations were false or true; wherfore he was driven to helpe himselfe by his wit and strength for to hinder Camila from striking of him, who did so lively acte her strange guile and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

fiction, as to give it colour, she would give it a blush of her owne blood: for perceiving, or else fayning that shee could not hurt Lothario, she said, Seeing that adverse fortune will not satisfie throughly my just desires, yet at least it shall not be potent wholly to crosse my designes: and then striving to free the dagger hand, which Lothario held fast, she snatched it away, and directing the point to some place of her bodie, which might hurt her but not very grievously, she stabd her selfe, and hid it in her apparrell neere unto the left shoulder, and fell forthwith to the ground, as if she were in a traunce. Lothario and Leonela stood amazed at the unexpected event, and still rested doubtfull of the truth of the matter, seeing Camila to lie on the ground bathed in her bloud: Lothario ranne all wanne and pale, very hastily to her to take out the poyniard, and seeing how little bloud followed, he lost the feare that he had conceived of her greater hurt, and began a new to admire the cunning wit, and discretion of the beautifull Camila: but yet that he might play the part of a friend, he began a long and dolefull lamentation over Camilas bodie, even as she were dead, and began to breathe forth many curses and execrations not onely against himself, but also against him that had employed him in that unfortunate affaire. And knowing that his friend Anselmo did listen unto him, hee said such things as would move a man to take more compassion of him then of Camila her selfe, although they accounted her dead. Leonela tooke her up betweene her armes, and laid her on the bedde, and intreated Lothario to goe out, and finde some one that would undertake to cure her secretly. She also demaunded of him his advice, touching the excuse they might make to Anselmo concerning her Mistresse her wound, if hee came to towne before it were fully cured. He answered that they might say what they pleased, for hee was not in an humour of giving any counsell worth the following: And onely sayd this, that shee should labour to staunch her Ladies bloud: for hee meant to goe there, whence they should heare no newes of him ever after: And so departed out of the house with verie great tokens of grieve and feeling, and when hee was alone in

CHAPTER
VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

place where no bodie perceived him, he blist himselfe a thousand times, to thinke of Camilas Art, and the gestures so proper and accommodated to the purpose, used by her mayde Leonela. Hee considered how assured Anselmo would remayne, that hee had a second Portia to wife, and desired to meeke him, that they might celebratte together the fiction, and the best dissembled truth that could bee ever imagined. Leonela as is said, staunched her Ladies bloud, which was just as much as might serve to colour her invention and no more, and washing the wound with some wine, shee tyed it up the best that she could, saying such words whildest she cured her, as were able, though nothing had been done before to make Anselmo beleeve that he had an Image of honesty in Camila: to the plants of Leonela Camila added others, terming her selfe a Coward of base spirit, since she wanted time, (being a thing so necessary) to deprive her life which she hated so mortally, she demaunded counsell of her maiden whether shee would tell, or conceale all that successe to her beloved Spouse: and she answered that it was best to conceale it, lest she should ingage her husband to be revenged on Lothario, which could not be done without his very great perill, and that every good wife was bound, not to give occasion to her husband of quarrelling, but rather to remove from him as many as was possible. Camila answered, that she allowed of her opinion, and would follow it. And that in any sort they must studie some device to cloake the occasion of her hurt from Anselmo, who could not chuse but espie it. To this Leonela answered, that she her selfe knew not how to lie, no not in very jest it selfe. Well, friend, quoth Camila, and I, what doe I know? for I dare not to forge or report an untruth, if my life lay on it. And if wee knew not how to give it a better issue, it will be better to report the naked truth, then to bee overtaken in a leesing. Doe not trouble your selfe Madame quoth Leonela, for I will bethinke my selfe of somewhat betweene this and to morrow morning, and perhaps the wound may be concealed from him, by reason that it is in the place where it is, and heaven perhaps may be pleased to favour our

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

so just and honourable thoughts : Be quiet good Madam
and labour to appease your alteration of mind, that my
Lord at his returne may not find you perplexed, and leave
all the rest to Gods and my charge, who doth alwaies assist
the just.

CHAPTER
VII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the History
of the curious
impertinent.

With highest attention stood Anselmo listening and beholding the tragedie of his dying honours, which the personages thereof had acted with so strange and forceable effects, as it verily seemed that they were transformed into the opposite truth of their well contrived fiction: hee longed greatly for the night, and leasure to get out of his house, that he might goe and congratulate with his good friend Lothario, for the precious Iewell that he had found in this last triall of his wife. The Master and Mayden had as great care to give him the oportunitie to depart, and he fearing to loose it, issued out in a trice, and went presently to finde Lothario, who being found, it is not possible to recount the embracements he gave unto him, the secrets of his contentment that he revealed, or the attributes and praises he gave to Camila. All which Lothario heard, without giving the least argument of love: having represented to his minde at that very time, how greatly deceived his friend lived, and how injustly hee himselfe had injured him. And although that Anselmo noted that Lothario tooke no delight at his relation, yet did he beleeve that the cause of his sorrow proceeded from having left Camila wounded, and he himselfe given the occasion thereof. And therefore among many other words said unto him, that there was no occasion to grieve at Camilas hurt, it doubtlesly being but light, seeing she and her mayde had agreed to hide it from him ; and that according unto this there was no great cause of feare, but that from thence forward he should live merrily and contentedly with him, seeing that by his industrie and meanes, hee found himselfe raised to the highest felicitie that might be desired : and therefore would from thenceforth spend his idle times in writing of verses in Camilas praise, that he might eternize her name, and make it famous in insuing ages. Lothario commended his resolution therein, and said that he for his part would also

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VII

Wherein is prosecuted the History of the curious impertinent.

helpe to raise up so noble an edifice, and herewithall Anselmo rested the most soothingly and contentedly deceived, that could bee found in the world: and then himselfe tooke by the hand to his house (beleeving that he bore the instrument of his glory) the utter perdition of his fame. Camila entertained him with a frowning countenance, but a cheerefull minde, the fraude rested unknowne a while, untill at the end of certaine moneths, fortune turned the wheele, and the wickednesse that was so artificially cloaked, issued to the publike notice of the world, and Anselmo his impertinent curiositie cost him his life.

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent: and likewise recounted the rough incounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certaine bagges of red wine.



LITTLE more of the novell did rest unread, when Sancho Pança all perplexed ranne out of the Chamber where his Lord reposed, crying as loud as hee could. Come good Sirs speedily, and assist my Lord, who is ingaged in one of the most terrible battailes, that ever mine eyes have seene. I sweare that he hath given such a blow to the Giant, my Ladie the Princesse Micomicona her enemie, as hee hath cut his head quite off as round as a Turnep. What sayest thou, friend, quoth the Curate, (leaving off at that word to prosecute the reading of his novell) art thou in thy wits, Sancho? what a Divell, man, how can that be, seeing the Giant dwels at least two thou-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

sand leagues from hence. By this they heard a marvailous great noyse within the chamber, and that Don-Quixote cried out aloud, Stay false Thiefe, Robber stay, for since thou art here, thy Cimitar shall but little availe thee ; and therewithall it seemed that he struck a number of mighty blowes on the wals. And Sancho said, there is no neede to stand thus listening abroad, but rather that you goe in, and part the fray, or else assist my Lord. Although I thinke it be not very necessary, for the Giant is questionlesse dead by this, and giving account for the ill life hee ledde : For I saw his bloud runne all about the house, and his head cut off, which is as great as a great Wine bagge. I am content to bee hewen in pieces, quoth the Inne keeper, hearing of this, if Don-Quixote or Don-Divell have not given some blow to one of the wine bagges that stood filled at his beds head, and the shedde wine must needes bee that which seemes bloud to this good man, and saying so, he entred into the roome, and all the rest followed him, where they found Don-Quixote in the strangest guise that may bee imagined : hee was in his shirt, the which was not long enough before to cover his thighes, and it was sixe fingers shorter behinde : his legges were very long and leane, full of haire and horrible dirtie. Hee wore on his head a little red very greazy nightcap, which belonged to the Inkeeper, he had wreathed on his left arme the coverlet of his bedde, on which Sancho looked very often and angerly, as one that knew well the cause of his owne malice to it, and in his right hand he griped his naked sword, wherewithall he laid round about him many a thwacke, and withall spake, as if he were in battell with some Giant : and the best sport of all was, that he held not his eyes open, for he was indeed a sleepe, and dreaming that he was in fight with the Giant. For the imagination of the adventure which hee had undertaken to finish, was so bent upon it, as it made him to dreame that he was already arrived at the Kingdome of Micomicon, and that he was then in combate with his enemie : and hee had given so many blowes on the wine bagges, supposing them to bee the Giant, as all the whole chamber flowed with wine. Which being perceived by the Host all inflamed

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent : and likewise recounted the rough encounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certayne bagges of red wine.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent: and likewise recounted the rough incounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certaine bagges of red wine.

with rage, he set upon Don-Quixote with drie fistes, and gave unto him so many blowes, that if Cardenio and the Curate had not taken him away, he would doubtlesly have finished the warre of the Giant, and yet with al this did not the poore Knight awake, untill the Barber brought in a great Kettle full of cold water from the Wel, and threw it all at a clap upon him, and therewithall Don-Quixote awaked but not in such sort as hee perceived the manner wherein he was. Dorotea seeing how short and how thin her Champion was arrayed, would not goe in to see the conflict of her combattant and his adversarie.

Sancho went up and downe the floore searching for the Giants head, and seeing that he could not finde it, hee said, Now I doe see very well, that all the things of this house are enchantments, for the last time that I was here in this very same roome, I got many blowes and buffets, and knew not who did strike me, nor could I see any body: and now the head appeares not which I saw cut off with mine owne eyes, and yet the bloud ranne as swiftly from the body, as water would from a fountaine. What bloud or what fountaine dost thou tattle of here, thou enemie of God and his Saints? quoth the Inkeeper; thou theefe, dost not thou see that the bloud and the fountaine is no other thing, then these wine bagges which are slashed here, and the wine redde that swims up and downe this Chamber, and I wish that I may see his soule swimming in hell which did bore them? I know nothing, replied Sancho, but this, that if I cannot finde the Giants head, I shall become so unfortunate, as mine Earledome will dissolve like salt cast into water. And certes, Sancho awake, was in worse case then his Master sleeping, so much had his Lords promises distracted him. The Inkeeper on the other side was at his wits end, to see the humour of the Squire, and unhappinesse of his Lord, and swore that it should not succeed with them now as it had done the other time, when they went away without payment: and that now the priviledges of Chivalrie should not availe him, but hee should pay both the one and other, yea even for the very patches that were to be set on the boared wine-bagges.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

The Curate held fast Don-Quixote by the hands, who
beleeving that he had atchieved the adventure, and was after
it come into the Princesse Micomicona her presence, he
laid himselfe on his knees before the Curate, saying : ' Well
' may your greatnessse, high, and famous Ladie, live from
' hence forth secure from any danger, that this unfortunate
' wretch may doe unto you ; and I am also freed from this
' day forward from the promise that I made unto you, see-
' ing I have by the assistance of the heavens, and through
' her favour by whom I live and breathe, so happily accom-
' plished it.' Did not I say so ? quoth Sancho, hearing of
his Master ; yea, I was not drunke : see, if my Master hath
not powdred the Giant by this ? the matter is questionlesse,
and the Earledome is mine owne. Who would not laugh
at these raving fits of the Master and Man ? all of them
laughed save the Inkeeper, who gave himselfe for anger to
the Divell more then a hundred times. And the Barber,
Cardenio and the Curate got Don-Quixote to bed againe,
not without much adoe, who presently fell asleepe with
tokens of marvailous wearinesse. They left him sleeping,
and went out to comfort Sancho Pança for the grieve hee had,
because hee could not finde the Giant's head: but yet had
more adoe to pacifie the Inkeeper, who was almost out of his
wits for the unexpected and sudden death of his wine bagges.

The Hostesse on the other side went up and downe
whining and saying, in an ill season and an unlucky houre
did this Knight Errant enter into my house ; Alas, and I
would that mine eyes had never seene him, seeing hee costs
mee so deere. The last time that hee was heere, hee went
away scot-free for his supper, bedde, straw, and barley, both
for himselfe and his man, his horse, and his Asse, saying,
that he was a knight adventurous (and God give to him ill
venture, and to all the other adventurers of the world) and
was not therefore bound to pay any thing, for so it was
written in the statutes of Chivalry. And now for his cause
came the other Gentleman, and tooke away my good taile,
and hath returned it me backe, with two quarters of damage.
For all the haire is falne off, and it cannot stand my husband
any more in steed for the purpose he had it ; and for an

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is
ended the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent :
and likewise
recounted
the rough
incounter and
conflict passed
betweene
Don-Quixote
and certayne
bagges of
red wine.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent : and likewise recounted the rough encounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certaine bagges of red wine.

end and conclusion of all, to break my wine bagges and shedde my wine: I wish I may see as much of his bloud shedde. And do not thinke otherwise; for by my fathers old bones, and the life of my mother, they shall pay mee every doit, one quart on another, or else I will never be called as I am, nor be mine owne fathers daughter. These and such like words spake the Inkeepers wife with very great fury, and was seconded by her good servant Maritornes. The daughter held her peace, and would now and then smile a little: but Master Parson did quiet and pacifie all, by promising to satisfie them for the damages as well as he might, as well for the wine as for the bagges, but chiefly for her taile, the which was so much accounted of, and valued so highly. Dorotea did comfort Sancho, saying to him, that whensoever it should be verified that his Lord had slaine the Giant, and established her quietly in her kingdome, she would bestow upon him the best Earldome thereof. With this he tooke courage, and assured the Princesse, that he himselfe had seene the Giants head cut off, and for a more certaine token thereof, he said that hee had a beard that reached him downe to his gyrdle; and that if the head could not now be found, it was by reason that all the affaires of the house were guided by enchantment, as hee had made experiance to his cost the last time that he was lodged therein. Dorotea replied, that she was of the same opinion, and bad him to be of good cheere, for all would be well ended to his hearts desire. All parties being quieted, the Curate resolved to finish the end of his novell, because he perceived that there rested but a little unread thereof. Cardenio, Dorotea, and all the rest intreated him earnestly to finish it. And he desiring to delight them all herein, and recreate himselfe, did prosecute the tale in this manner.

It after befell, that Anselmo grew so satisfied of his wives honestie, as he led a most contented and secure life: and Camila did for the nonce looke sourely upon Lothario to the end Anselmo might conster her mind amisse: and for a greater confirmation thereof, Lothario requested Anselmo to excuse his comming any more to his house, seeing that hee cleerely perceived how Camila could neither brooke his

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

company nor presence. But the hoodwink'd Anselmo answered him, that he would in no wise consent thereunto, and in this manner did weave his owne dishonour a thousand waies, thinking to worke his contentment. In this season such was the delight that Leonela tooke also in her affections, as she suffered her selfe to be borne away by them headlongly without any care or regard confident, because her Ladie did cover it, yea, and sometimes instructed her how she might put her desires in practice, without any feare or danger. But finally Anselmo heard on a night some body walke in Leonelas Chamber, and being desirous to know who it was, as he thought to enter, he felt the doore to be held fast against him, which gave him a greater desire to open it, and therfore he struggled so long, and used such violence, as he threw open the dore, and entred just at the time that another leaped out at the window, and therfore he ran out to overtake him, or see wherein he might know him, but could neyther compasse the one or the other, by reason that Leonela embracing him hardly, with-held him and said, pacifie your self, good Sir, and be not troubled, nor follow him that was here, for he is one that belongs to mee, and that so much as hee is my spouse. Anselmo would not beleive her, but rather blinde with rage, he drew out his poyniard, and would have wounded her, saying, that she should presently tell him the truth, or else he would kill her. She distracted with feare, said, without noting her owne words: Kill mee not Sir, and I will acquaint you with things which concerne you more then you can imagine. Say quickly then, quoth Anselmo, or else thou shalt die. It will bee impossible, replied Leonela, for me to speake any thing now I am so affrighted, but give me respite till morning, and I will recount unto you things that will marvellously astonish you, and in the meane time rest secure; that he which leaped out of the window is a young man of this citie, betwixt whom and me hath passed a promise of marriage. Anselmo was somewhat satisfied by these words, and therefore resolved to expect the terme which she had demaunded to open her minde; for hee did not suspect that he should heare any thing of Camila, by

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent: and likewise recounted the rough encounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certayne bagges of red wine.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent : and likewise recounted the rough encounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certaine bagges of red wine.

reason that hee was already so assured of her vertue : and so departing out of the chamber, and shutting up Leonela therin, threatning her withall, that she should never depart thence, untill she had said all that she promised to reveale unto him. He went presently to Camila to tell unto her all that which his mayden had said, and the promise she had passed, to disclose greater and more important things ; whether Camila hearing this, were perplexed or no, I leave to the discretee readers judgement : for such was the feare which she conceived, beleeving certainely (as it was to be doubted) that Leonela would tell to Anselmo all that she knew of her disloyalty, as she had not the courage to expect and see whether her surmise would become false or no : but the very same night, as soone as she perceived Anselmo to be asleepe, gathering together her best jewels and some money, she departed out of her house unperceived of any, and went to Lotharios lodging, to whom she recounted al that had past, and requested him eyther to leave her in some safe place, or both of them to depart to some place, where they might live secure out of Anselmos reach. The confusion that Camila strucke into Lothario, was such, as he knew not what to say, and much lesse how to resolve himselfe what he might do. But at last he determined to carie Camila to a Monastery wherein his sister was Prioress ; to which shée easily condiscended, and therefore Lothario departed, and left her there with all the speed that the case required, and did also absent himselfe presently from the citie, without acquainting any body with his departure.

Anselmo, as soone as it was day, without heeding the absence of his wife, arose and went to the place where he had shut up Leonela, with desire to know of her what she had promised to acquaint him withall : he opened the chamber dore and entred, but could finde no body therein, but some certaine sheetes knit together, and tied to the window as a certaine signe how Leonela had made an escape by that way. Wherefore he returned very sadde, to tell to Camila the adventure ; but when hee could neither finde her at bedde, nor in the whole house, he remained astonied, and demaunded for her of his servants, but none of them could tell him any

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

thing. And as he searched for her, hee hapned to see her coffers lye open, and most of her jewels wanting ; and heerewithall fell into the true account of his disgrace, and that Leonela was not the cause of his misfortune, and so departed out of his house sad and pensive, even as hee was, halfe ready and unapparellled to his friend Lothario, to recount unto him his disaster: but when hee found him to be likewise absented, and that the servants told him how their master was departed the very same night, and had borne away with him all his money, he was ready to runne out of his wits. And to conclude, hee returned to his owne house againe, wherin he found no creature, man or woman, for all his folke were departed, and had left the house alone and desert: he knew not what he might thinke, say, or doe, and then his judgement beganne to faile him. There he did contemplate and behold himselfe in an instant, without a wife, a friend, and servants : abandoned (to his seeming) of heaven that covered him, and chiefly without honour, for he clearely noted his owne perdition in Camilas crime. In the end he resolved, after he had bethought himselfe a great while to go to his friends Village wherein hee had beeene all the while that hee afforded the leisure to contrive that disaster, and so shutting up his house, he mounted a horse-backe, and rode away in languishing and dolefull wise. And scarce had he ridden the halfe way, when he was so fiercely assaulted by his thoughts, as he was constrained to alight, and tying his horse to a tree, he leaned himselfe to the trunke thereof, and breathed out a thousand pittifull and dolorous sighes : and there hee abode untill it was almost night; about which hour hee espied a man to come from the Cittie a horse-backe by the same way, and having saluted him, he demaunded of him what newes he brought from Florencia ? The Cittizen replied that the strangest that had hapned there many a day, for it is there reported publikely, that Lothario the great friend of the rich man, hath carried away the said Anselmos wife Camila this night, for shee is also missing, all which a waiting-maide of Camilas hath confess, whom the governour apprehended yesternight, as she slipt downe at a window by a paire of sheets, out of the said Anselmos house.

CHAPTER
VIII
Wherein is
ended the
Historie of
the curious
impertinent :
and likewise
recounted
the rough
incounter and
conflict passed
betweene
Don-Quixote
and certayne
bagges of
red wine.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent : and likewise recounted the rough encounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote and certaine bagges of red wine.

I know not particularly the truth of the affaire, but well I wote, that all the Cittie is amazed at the accident, for such a fact would not be as much as surmised, from the great and familiar amitie of them two, which was so much, as they were called the two friends. Is it perhaps yet knownen, quoth Anselmo, which way Lothario and Camila have taken ? In no wise, replied the Cittizen, although the Gouvernour hath used all possible diligence to finde them out. Farewell then, good Sir, said Anselmo ; and with you Sir, said the traveller : and so departed.

With these so unfortunate newes poore Anselmo arrived not only to termes of loosing his wits, but also welnigh of loosing his life : and therefore arising as well as he might, he came to his friends house, who had heard nothing yet of his disgrace ; but perceiving him to arrive, so wanne, pyned and dried up, he presently conjectured that some grievous evill afflicted him. Anselmo requested him presently that hee might be carried to his chamber, and provided of paper and inke to write withall ; all was done, and he left at bed, and alone, for so he desired them ; and also that the dore should bee fast locked : and being alone, the imagination of his misfortune gave him such a terrible charge, as he clearely perceived that his life would shortly faile him, and therefore resolved to leave notice of the cause of his suddaine and unexpected death : and therefore he beganne to write it, but before he could set an end to his discourse, his breath failed, and yeelded up his life into the hands of sorrowe, which his impertinent curiositie had stirred up in him. The Gentleman of the house seeing that it grew late, and that Anselmo had not called, determined to enter, and know whether his indisposition passed forward : and hee found him lying on his face, with halfe of his body in the bed, and the other halfe leaning on the table whereon hee lay, with a written paper unfolded, and held the pen also yet in his hand. His Host drew neere unto him, and first of all having called him, hee tooke him by the hand : and seeing that hee answered not, and that it was cold, he knew that he was dead : and greatly perplexed and grieved thereat, hee called in his people, that they might also be witnesses of the disastrous successe

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

of Anselmo : and after all he tooke the paper and read it, which he knew to bee written with his owne hand, the substance whereof was this :

‘A foolish and impertinent desire hath despoiled mee of life. If the newes of my death shall arrive to Camila, let her also know that I doe pardon her, for shee was not bound to worke miracles ; nor had I any neede to desire that shee should worke them. And seeing I was the builder and contriver of mine owne dishonour, there is no reason.’

Hitherunto did Anselmo write, by which it appeared, that his life ended in that point, ere he could set an end to the reason he was to give. The next day insuing, the Gentleman his friend, acquainted Anselmos kinsfolke with his death : the which had already knowledge of his misfortune, and also of the Monasterie wherein Camila had retired her selfe, being almost in termes to accompany her husband in that forcible voyage ; not for the newes of his death, but for grieve of others which she had received of her absent friend. It is said that although she was a widdow, yet would shee neither depart out of the Monasterie, nor become a religious woman, untill shee had received within a few dayes after newes how Lothario was slaine in a battell given by Monsieur de Lautrec, to the great Captaine Gonçalo Fernandez of Cordova, in the Kingdome of Naples : and that was the end of the late repentant friend, the which being knowne to Camila she made a profession, and shortly after deceased betweene the rigorous hands of sorrow and melancholie, and this was the end of them all, sprung from a rash and inconsidere beginning.

This novell, quoth the Curate, having read it, is a prettie one ; but yet I cannot perswade my selfe that it is true : and if it be a fiction, the authour erred therein, for it cannot bee imagined, that any husband would be so foolish, as to make so costly an experience as did Anselmo. But if this accident had beeene devised betwixt a Gentleman and his love, then were it possible, but being betweene man and wife, it containes somewhat that is impossible and unlikely :
but yet I can take no exception against the manner of recounting thereof.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates of many rare successes, befalne
in the Inne.



HILST they discoursed thus, the Inkeeper, who stood all the while at the dore, said, heere comes a faire troupe of guests; and if they will here alight, wee may sing *Gaudemus*. What folke is it? quoth Cardenio. Foure men a horsebacke, quoth the Host, and ride gennetwise, with launces and targets, and masks on their faces, and with them comes likewise a woman, apparellled in white, in a side saddle, and her face also masked, and two Lackeys, that run with them a foote. Are they neere? quoth the Curate. So neare, replied the Inkeeper, as they do now arrive. Dorotea hearing him say so, covered her face, and Cardenio entred into Don-Quixotes Chamber, and scarce had they leisure to doe it, when the others, of whom the Host spake, entred into the Inne: and the foure Horsemen alighting, which were all of very comely and gallant disposition, they went to helpe downe the Lady that rode in the side saddle; and one of them taking her downe in his armes, did seat her in a chaire that stood at the chamber dore, into which Cardenio had entred and all this while neither shee, nor they, tooke off their maskes, or speake a word, onely the Gentlewoman, at her sitting downe in the Chaire, breathed forth a very deepe sigh, and let fall her armes, like a sicke and dismayed person. The Lackeyes carried away their Horses to the Stable. Master Curate seeing and noting all this, and curious to know what they were that came to the Inne in so unwonted an attyre, and kept such profound silence therein, went to the Lackeies, and demaunded of one of them that which he desired to know. Who answered him, In good faith Sir I cannot

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

tell you what folke this is, only this I know, that they
seeme to be very Noble, but chiefly hee that went and tooke
downe the Ladie in his armes that you see there: and this I
say, because all the others doe respect him very much, and
nothing is done, but what hee ordaines and commaunds.
And the Ladie, what is shee? quoth the Curate. I can as
hardly informe you, quoth the Lackey, for I have not once
seen her face in all this journey, yet I have heard her
often grone, and breathe out so profound sighes, as it
seemes shee would give up the Ghost at every one of them:
and it is no marvaile, that we should know no more then
wee have said, for my companion and my selfe have beeene
in their companie but two dayes: for they incountred us on
the way, and prayed and perswaded us to goe with them
unto Andaluzia, promising that they would recompence
our paines largely. And hast thou heard them name one
another? said the Curate. No truly, answered the Lackey;
for they all travale with such silence, as it is a wonder: for
you shall not heare a word among them, but the sighs and
throbs of the poore Ladie, which doe move in us very great
compassion, and we doe questionlesse perswade our selves,
that she is forced wheresoever shee goes: and as it may
bee collected by her attyre shee is a Nunne, or as is most
probable goes to be one; and perhaps shee goeth so sorrow-
full as it seemes, because shee hath no desire to become
religious. It may very well be so, quoth the Curate; and
so leaving them hee returned to the place where he had left
Dorotea, who hearing the disguised Ladie to sigh so often,
mooved by the native compassion of that sexe, drew neare
her and said, what ailes you good Madam? I pray you
thinke if it be any of those inconveniences to which women
bee subject, and whereof they may have use and experience to
cure them: I doe offer unto you my service, assistance, and
good will, to helpe you as much as lies in my power. To
all those complements the dolefull Ladie answered nothing,
and although Dorotea made her againe larger offers of her
service, yet stood shee ever silent untill the bemasked
Gentleman (whom the Lackey said, the rest did obey)
came over and said to Dorotea: Ladie doe not trouble

CHAPTER
IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successees,
befalne in
the Inne.

your selfe, to offer any thing to that woman, for shee is of a most ingratefull nature, and is never wont to gratifie any curtesie, nor doe you seeke her to answer unto your demaunds, if you would not heare some lie from her mouth. I never said any (quoth the silent Ladie) but rather because I am so true and sincere without guiles, I am now drowned here in those misfortunes, and of this I would have thy selfe beare witnesse, seeing my pure truth makes thee to be so false and disloyal.

Cardenio overheard these words very cleere and distinctly, as one that stood so neere unto her that said them, as onely Don-Quixotes chamber doore stood between them, and instantly when he heard them, he said with a very loud voyce, good God, what is this that I heare? what voyce is this that hath touched mine eare? The Ladie moved with a sodaine passion, turned her head at those outcries, and seeing shee could not perceive him that gave them, she got up, and would have entred into the roome, which the Gentleman espying, withheld her, and would not let her stirre out of the place: and with the alteration and sodaime motion the maske fell off her face, and she discovered an incomparable beautie, and an angelicall countenance, although it was somewhat wanne and pale, and turned heere and there with her eyes to every place so earnestly as she seemed to be distracted: which motions without knowing the reason why they were made, strucke Dorotea and the rest that beheld her into very great compassion. The Gentleman held her very strongly fast by the shoulders, and was so busied as hee could not hold up the maske, that hee wore on his own face that was falling, as it did in the end wholy: Dorotea, who had likewise embrased the Ladie, lifting up her eyes by chance, saw that he, which did also embrace the Ladie was her spouse Don Fernando: and scarce had she known him, when breathing out a long and most pittifull 'Alas' from the bottome of her heart, she fell backward in a trance. And if the Barber had not bin by good hap at hand, she would have falne on the ground with all the waight of her bodie: the Curate presently repaired to take off the vaile of her face, and cast

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

water thereon : and as soone as he did discover it, Don Fernando, who was he indeed that held fast the other, knew her, and looked like a dead man as soone as he viewed her, but did not all this [while] let go Luscinda, who was the other whom he held so fast, and that laboured so much to escape out of his hands. Cardenio likewise heard the 'Alas' that Dorotea said, when she fell into a trance, and beleeving that it was his Luscinda, issued out of the chamber greatly altered, and the first he espied was Don Fernando, which held Luscinda fast ; who forthwith knew him : and all the three, Luscinda, Cardenio, and Dorotea, stood dumbe and amazed, as folke that knew not what had befallne unto them. All of them held their peace, and beheld one another. Dorotea looked on Don Fernando, Don Fernando on Cardenio, Cardenio on Luscinda, and Luscinda againe on Cardenio : but Luscinda was the first that broke silence, speaking to Don Fernando in this manner. Leave me off, Lord Fernando, I conjure thee, by that thou shouldest bee, for that which thou art ; if thou wilt not doe it for any other respect : let me cleave to the wall, whose Ivie I am, to the supporter from whom neither thy importunitiess nor threats, promises or gifts could once deflect me. Note how heaven, by unusuall, unfrequented, and from us concealed waies, hath set my true spouse before mine eyes : and thou doest know well by a thousand costly experiences, that onely death is potent to blot forth his remembrance out of my memory : let then so manifest truthe be of power (if thou must doe none other) to convert thine affliction into rage, and thy good will into despight, and therewithall end my life : for if I may render up the ghost in the presence of my deere spouse, I shall account it fortunately lost. Perhaps by my death he will remaine satisfied of the faith, which I ever kept sincere towards him, untill the last period of my life. By this time Dorotea was come to her selfe, and listned to most of Luscindas reasons, and by them came to the knowledge of her selfe : but seeing that Don Fernando did not yet let her depart from betweene his armes, nor answer any thing to her words, encouraging her selfe the best that she might, she arose, and kneeling

CHAPTER
IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successees,
befalne in
the Inne.

at his feete, and shedding a number of Cristall and penetrating teares, she spoke to him thus.

If it be not so my Lord, that the beames of that Sunne which thou holdest eclipsed betweene thine armes, doe darken and deprive those of thine eyes, thou mightest have by this perceived how she that is prostrated at thy feet is the unfortunate (untill thou shalt please) and the disastrous Dorotea. I am that poore humble countriwoman, whom thou eyther through thy bountie, or for thy pleasure didst deigne to raise to that height that she might call thee her owne. I am she which sometime immured within the limits of honestie did lead a most contented life, untill it opened the gates of her recollection and wearinesse, to thine importunitie, and seeming just, and amorous requests, and rendred up to thee the keyes of her libertie, a greefe by thee so ill recompensed, as the finding my selfe in so remote a place as this: wherein you have met with mee, and I seene you, may cleerely testifie, but yet for all this, I would not have you to imagine that I come heere, guided by dis honourable steps being onely hither conducted by the tracts of dolour, and feeling to see my selfe thus forgotten by thee. It was thy will, that I should be thine owne, and thou didst desire it in such a manner, as although now thou wouldest not have it so, yet canst not thou possibly leave off to be mine. Know my deare Lord that the matchlesse affections that I do beare towards thee, may recompense and be equivalent to her beautie and nobilitie, for whom thou doest abandon mee. Thou canst not be the beautifull Luscindas, because thou art mine: nor she thine, for as much as shee belongs to Cardenio, and it will be more easie, if you will note it well, to reduce thy will to love her that adores thee, then to addresse hers that hates thee, to beare thee affection: Thou diddest sollicite my wretchednesse; thou prayedst to mine integritie, and wast not ignorant of my qualitie: thou knowest also very well upon what termes I subjected my selfe to thy will, so as there remaines no place, nor colour to terme it a fraud or deceit. And all this being so, as in veritie it is, and that thou beest as Christian as thou art noble, why doest thou with these

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

so many untoward wreathings dilate the making of mine end happy, whose commencement thou diddest illustrate so much? and if thou wilt not have mee for what I am, who am thy true and lawfull spouse; yet at least take and admit me for thy slave, for so that I may be in thy possession, I will account my selfe happy and fortunate. Doe not permit that by leaving and abandoning me, meetings may be made to discourse of my dishonour. Doe not vexe thus the declining yeeres of my parents, seeing that the loyall services which they ever have done as vassailles to thine, deserve not so honest a recompence. And if thou esteemest that thy bloud by medling with mine shall be stayned or embased: consider how few Noble howses, or rather none at all are there in the world, which have not runne the same way: and that the womans side is not essentially requisite for the illustrating of noble descents, how much more, seeing that true nobilitie consists in vertue, which if it shall want in thee, by refusing that which thou owest mee so justly, I shall remaine with many more degrees of nobilitie then thou shalt. And in conclusion, that which I will lastly say, is, that whether thou wilt or no, I am thy wife, the witnesses are thine owne words, which neither should nor ought to lie, if thou doest prize thy selfe of that for whose want thou despisest mee. Witnesse shall also be thine owne hand writing. Witnesse heaven, which thou didst invoke to beare witnesse of that which thou didst promise unto mee: and when all this shal fail, thy very conscience shall never fayle from using clamours, being silent in thy mirth and turning, for this truth which I have said to thee now, shall trouble thy greatest pleasure and delight.

These and many other like reasons did the sweetly grieved Dorotea use with such feeling and abundance of teares, as all those that were present, as well such as accompanied Don Fernando, as all the others that did accompany her. Don Fernando listned to her without replying a word, untill she had ended her speech, and given beginning to so many sighes and sobs, as the heart that could indure to behold them without moving, were harder then brasse. Luscinda

CHAPTER
IX
Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalme in
the Inne.

did also regard her, no lesse compassionate of her sorrow, then admired at her discretion and beautie: and although she would have approched to her, and used some consolatorie words, yet was she hindred by Don Fernandoes armes, which held her still embraced; who full of confusion and marvell, after he had stood very attentively beholding Dorotea a good while, opening his armes, and leaving Luscinda free, said, Thou hast vanquished: O beautifull Dorotea, thou hast vanquished me. For it is not possible to resist or deny so many united truthes. Luscinda through her former trance and weakenesse, as Don Fernando left her, was like to fall, if Cardenio, who stoode behind Don Fernando all the while, lest he should be knowne, shaking off all feare and indangering his person, had not started forward to stay her from falling: and clasping her sweetly between his armes, he said, if pittifull heaven be pleased, and would have thee now at last take some ease, my loyall, constant and beautifull ladie, I presume that thou canst not possesse it more securely, then betweene these armes which do now receive thee, as whilome they did when fortune was pleased, that I might call thee mine owne: and then Luscinda first severing her eyelids, beheld Cardenio, and having first taken notice of him by his voyce, and confirmed it againe by her sight, like one quite distracted, without farther regarding modest respects, she cast both her armes about his necke, and joyning her face to his, said; yea, thou indeed art my Lord: thou, the true owner of this poore captive, howsoever adverse fortune shall thwart it, or this life, which is only sustained and lives by thine, be ever so much thretned. This was a marvellous spectacle to Don Fernando, and all the rest of the beholders, which did universally admire at this so unexpected an event: and Dorotea perceiving Don Fernando to change color, as one resolving to take revenge on Cardenio, for he had set hand to his sword; which she conjecturing, did with marvellous expedition kneele, and catching hold on his legges, kissing them, she strained them with so loving embracements, as he could not stirre out of the place, and then with her eyes overflowen with teares, said unto him: what meanest

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

thou to doe my onely refuge in this unexpected traunce? Thou hast heere thine owne spouse at thy feete, and her whom thou wouldest faine possesse, is betweene her owne husbands armes: judge then whether it become thee, or is a thing possible to dissolve that which heaven hath knit, or whether it be any wise laudable to indeavour to raise and equall to thy selfe her, who contemning all dangers and inconveniences, and confirmed in faith and constancy, doth in thy presence bathe her eyes with amorous liquor of her true loves face and bosome. I desire thee for Gods sake, and by thine owne worths, I request thee that this so notorious a verity may not onely asswage thy choler, but also diminish it in such sort, as thou mayest quietly and peaceably permit those two lovers to enjoy their desires without any encumbrance, all the time that heaven shall grant it to them: and herein thou shalt shew the generositie of thy magnanimous and noble breast, and give the world to understand how reason prevaleth in thee, and dominereth over passion. All the time that Dorotea spoke thus to Don Fernando, although Cardenio held Luscinda betweene his armes, yet did he never take his eye of Don Fernando, with resolution, that if he did see him once stir in his prejudice, he would labour both to defend himself, and offend his adversary, and all those that shuld joine with him to do him any harme as much as he could, although it were with the rest of his life: but Don Fernandos friends, the Curate and Barber who were present, and saw all that was past repayred in the meane season, without omitting the good Sancho Pança, and all of them together compassed Don Fernando, intreating him to have regard of the beautifull Doroteas teares, and it being true (as they beleeved it was) which she had said he shold not permit her to remain defrauded of her so just and lawful hopes. And that he shold ponder how it was not by chance, but rather by the particular providence and disposition of the heavens, that they had al met together so unexpectedly. And that he shold remember, as Master Curate said very wel, that only death could sever Luscinda from her Cardenio. And that although the edge of a sword might devide and

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

part them asunder, yet in that case they would account their death most happy, and that in irremediesse events, it was highest prudence, by straining and overcomming himselfe to shew a generous minde, permitting that he might conquer his owne will they two should joy that good, which heaven had alreadie granted to them, and that he should convert his eyes to behold the beautie of Dorotea, and he should see that few or none could for feature paragon with her ; and much lesse excell her, and that he should confer her humilitie and extreme love which she bore to him, with her other indowments ; and principally, that if he gloried in the titles of Nobility or Christianitie, hee could not doe any other then accomplish the promise that he had past to her : and that by fulfilling it, hee should please God, and satisfie discreet persons, which know very well, how it is a speciaall prerogative of beautie, though it be in an humble and meane subject, if it bee consorted with modestie and vertue, to exalt and equall it selfe to any dignitie, without disparagement of him which doth helpe to raise, or unite it to himselfe. And when the strong lawes of delight are accomplished (so that there intercurre no sinne in the acting thereof) he is not to bee condemned which doth follow them. Finally, they added to these reasons, others so many and forcible, that the valerous breast of Don Fernando (as commonly all those that are warmed and nourished by Noble blood are wont) was mollified, and permitted it selfe to bee vanquished by that truth which he could not denie though hee would : and the token that hee gave of his being overcome, was to stoupe downe and imbrace Dorotea, saying unto her, arise Ladie, for it is not just that shee be prostrated at my feete, whose Image I have erected in my minde, and if I have not hitherto given demonstrations of what I now averre, it hath perhaps befallen through the disposition of heaven, to the end that I might by noting the constancie and faith where-withall thou dost affect me, know after how to valewe and esteeme thee according unto thy merits : and that which in recompence thereof I doe intreat of thee is, that thou wilt excuse in me mine ill maner of proceeding, and exceeding carelesnesse in repaying thy good will. For the very occa-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

sion and violent passions that made mee to accept thee as mine, the very same did also impell me againe not to be thine : and for the more verifying of mine assertion, doe but once behold the eyes of the now contented Luscinda, and thou mayest read in them a thousand excuses for mine error : and seeing shee hath found and obtained her hearts desire ; and I have in thee also gotten what is most convenient : for I wish she may live securely and joyfully, many and happy yeeres with her Cardenio, for I will pray the same, that it will license mee to enjoy my beloved Dorotea : and saying so, he embraced her againe, and joyned his face to hers with so lovely motion, as it constrainyd him to hold watch over his teares, lest violently bursting forth, they should give doubtlesse arguments of his fervent love, and remorse.

Cardenio, Luscinda, and almost all the rest could not doe so, for the greater number of them shed so many teares, some for their private contentment, and others for their friends, as it seemed, that some grievous and heavy misfortune had betidied them all : even very Sancho Pança wept, although hee excused it afterward, saying, that he wept only because that he saw that Dorotea was not the Queene Micomicona, as he had imagined, of whom he hoped to have received so great gifts and favours. The admiration and teares joyned, indured in them all for a pretty space, and presently after Cardenio and Luscinda went and kneeled to Don Fernando, yeelding him thankes for the favour that he had done to them, with so courteous complements, as he knew not what to answere ; and therefore lifted them up, and embraced them with very great affection and kindnesse ; and presently after he demaunded of Dorotea how she came to that place so farre from her owne dwelling ? And she recounted unto him all that she had told to Cardenio : whereat Don Fernando and those which came with him tooke so great delight, as they could have wished that her story had continued a longer time in the telling then it did, so great was Doroteas grace in setting out of her misfortunes. And as soone as she had ended, Don Fernando told all that had befallen him in the Citie, after that he had

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER IX

Which treates
of many rare
successes,
befalne in
the Inne.

found the scroule in Luscinda's bosome, wherein shee declared Cardenio to be her husband; and that he therefore could not marry her, and also how he attempted to kill her, and would have done it, were it not that her parents hindred him, and that hee therefore departed out of the house full of shame and despite, with resolution to revenge himselfe more commodiously; and how he understood the next day following, how Luscinda was secretly departed from her fathers house, and gone no body knew where; but that he finally learned within a few moneths after that she had entred into a certaine Monastery, with intention to remaine there all the daies of her life, if she could not passe them with Cardenio: and that as soone as he had learned that, choosing those three Gentlemen for his associates, hee came to the place where she was, but would not speake to her, fearing lest that as soone as they knew of his being there, they would increase the guardes of the Monastery, and therefore expected untill he found on a day the gates of the Monastery open; and leaving two of his fellowes to keepe the doore, he with the other entred into the Abbey in Luscindas search, whom they found talking with a Nunne in the Cloyster, and snatching her away ere she could retire her selfe, they brought her to a certaine village, where they disguised themselves in that sort they were; for so it was requisite for to bring her away. All which they did with the more facility, that the Monastery was seated abroad in the fields, a good way from any village. He likewise told that as soone as Luscinda saw her selfe in his power, she fell into a sound and that after she had returned to her selfe, she never did any other thing but weepe and sigh, without speaking a word; and that in that manner, accompanied with silence and teares, they had arrived to that Inne, which was to him as gratefull as an arrivall to heaven, wherein all earthly mis-
haps are concluded and finished.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.



ANCHO gave eare to all this with no small grieve of minde, seeing that all the hopes of his Lordship vanished away like smoake, and that the faire Princesse Micomicona was turned into Dorotea, and the Giant into Don Fernando, and that his Master slept so soundly and carelesse of all that had hapned. Dorotea could not yet assure her selfe whether the happinesse that she possest was a dreame, or no. Cardenio was in the very same taking, and also Luscindas thought run the same race. Don Fernando yeelded many thanks unto heaven for having dealt with him so propitiously, and unwinded him out of the intricate Labyrinth, wherein straying, hee was at the point to have lost at once his soule and credite, and finally, as many as were in the Inne, were very glad and joyfull of the successe of so thwart, intricate, and desperate affaires. The Curate compounded and ordered all things through his discretion, and congratulated every one of the good he obtayned: but she that kept greatest Iubilee and joy, was the Hostesse for the promise that Cardenio and the Curate had made to pay her the damages and harmes committed by Don-Quixote; onely Sancho, as we have said, was afflicted, unfortunate, and sorrowfull. And thus he entred with melancholy semblance to his Lord, who did but then awake, and said to him.

Well and securely may you sleepe, Sir Knight of the heavie countenance, as long as it shall please your selfe, without troubling your selfe with any care of killing any Giant, or of restoring the Queene to her Kingdome, for all is concluded

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.

and done already. I beleeve thee very easily, replied Don-Quixote, for I have had the monstrouest and most terrible battell with that Giant, that ever I thinke to have all the dayes of my life with any; and yet with one thwart blow thawacke, I overthrew his head to the ground: and there issued so much bloud, as the streames thereof ranne along the earth, as if they were of water. As if they were of red wine, you might better have said, replied Sancho Pança: for I would let you to understand, if you know it not already, that the dead Giant is a bored wine bagge: and the bloud, sixe and thirty gallons of redde Wine, which it contayned in his belly: the head that was flasht off so neatly, is the whoore my mother and let the Divell take all away for mee. And what is this thou sayest madde man (quoth Don-Quixote)? Art thou in thy right wits? Get up, Sir (quoth Sancho) and you your selfe shall see the faire stiffe you have made, and what we have to pay, and you shall behold the Queene transformed into a particular Ladie called Dorotea, with other successes, which if you may once conceive them aright, will strike you into admiration. I would marvell at nothing, quoth Don-Quixote, for if thou beest well remembred, I tolde thee the other time that we were here, how all that succeeded in this place, was done by enchantment, and what wonder then if now the like should eftsoones befall? I could easily be induced to beleeve all, replied Sancho, if my canvassing in the Coverlet were of that nature. But indeed it was not, but most reall and certaine. And I saw well how the Inkeeper that is here yet this very day alive, held one end of the Coverlet, and did tosse me up towards heaven with very good grace and strength, no lesse merrily then lightly: and where the notice of parties intercurs, I doe beleeve, although I am a simple man, and a sinner, that there is no kind of enchantment, but rather much trouble, brusing and misfortune. Well, God will remedie all, said Don-Quixote, and give me mine apparrell, for I will get up and goe forth, and see those successes and transformations which thou speakest of. Sancho gave him his cloathes, and whilst he was a making of him readie, the Curate recounted to Don Fernando and to the rest, Don-Quixotes mad pranks,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and the guile hee had used to bring him away out of the poore Rocke, wherein he imagined that hee lived exiled through the disdaine of his Lady. Hee told them moreover all the other adventures, which Sancho had discovered, whereat they did not laugh a little and wonder withall, because it seemed to them all to be one of the extravagantest kinds of madnesse, that ever befell a distracted braine. The Curate also added, that seeing the good successe of the Lady Dorotea did impeach the farther prosecuting of their designe, that it was requisite to invent and finde some other way, how to carry him home to his owne village. Cardenio offred himselfe to prosecute the adventure, and Luscinda should represent Doroteas person. No, quoth Don-Fernando, it shal not be so, for I will have Dorotea to prosecute her owne invention. For so that the Village of this good Gentleman be not very far off from hence, I will be very glad to procure his remedy. It is no more then two daies journey from hence, said the Curate. Wel though it were more replied Don Fernando, I wold be pleased to travel them, in exchange of doing so good a worke. Don-Quixote sallied out at this time completely armed with Mambrinos Helmet, (although with a great hole in it) on his head, his target on his arme, and leaned on his Trunke or Iaveline: his strange countenance and gate amazed Don Fernando and his companions very much, seeing his ilfavoured visage so withered and yeallow, the inequalitie and insuitability of his armes, and his grave manner of proceeding; and stood all silent to see what he would: who casting his eyes on the beautiful Dorotea, with very great gravitie and stayednesse said.

I am informed (beautifull Ladie) by this my Squire, that your greatnessse is annihilated, and your being destroyed: for of a Queene and mightie Princesse which you were wont to bee, you are now become a particular Damzell: which if it hath bene done by particular order of the magicall king your Father, dreading that I would not bee able to give you the necessarie and requisite helpe for your restitution; I say, that he neither knew nor doth know the one halfe of the enterprise, and that he was very little acquainted with

CHAPTER X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightful adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.

Histories of chivalry, for if he had read them, or passed them over with so great attention and leisure, as I have done and read them, he should have found at every other step how other knights of a great deale lesse fame then my selfe, have ended more desperate adventures, seeing it is not so great a matter to kill a Giant, be he ever so arrogant: for it is not many howres since I my selfe fought with one, and what insued I will not say, least they should tell me that I doe lie, but time the detector of all things will disclose it, when wee doe least thinke thereof. Thou foughtest with two wine bagges, and not with a Giant, quoth the Host at this season, but Don Fernando commaunded him to be silent, and not interrupt Don-Quixote in any wise, who prosecuted his speech saying. In fine I say high and dis-inherited Ladie, that if your father hath made this metamorphoses in your person for the causes related, give him no credit: for there is no peril so great on earth, but my sword shall open a way through it, wherewithall I overthrowing your enemies head to the ground, will set your Crowne on your owne head within a few dayes. Heere Don-Quixote held his peace, and awaited the Princesse her answere, who knowing Don Fernando's determination and will, that she should continue the commenced guile untill Don-Quixote were carried home againe, answered with a very good grace and countenance in this manner. Whosoever informed you valorous Knight of the ill favored face, that I have altered and changed my being, hath not told you the truth: for I am the very same to day, that I was yesterday: true it is, that some unexpected yet fortunate successes have wrought some alteration in mee by bestowing on me better hap, then I hoped for, or could wish my selfe: but yet for all that, I have not left off to be that which before, or to have the very same thoughts, which I ever had, to helpe my selfe by the valour of your most valorous and invincible arme. And therefore I request you good my Lord of your accustomed bounty, to returne my father his honour againe, and account of him as of a very discrete and prudent man; seeing that he found by this skill, so easie and so infallible a way to redresse my disgraces. For I doe certainly beleeve,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that if it had not beeene by your meanes, I should never have hapned to attaine to the good fortune, which now I possesse, as all those Noblemen present may witnesse: what therefore rests, is, that to morrow morning we doe set forward, for to day is now alreadie so overgone, as we should not be able to travaile very farre from hence: as for the conclusion of the good successe that I doe hourely expect, I referre that to God, and the valour of your invincible arme.

Thus much the discreet Dorotea said, and Don-Quixote having heard her, hee turned him to Sancho with very manifest tokens of indignation, and said. Now I say unto thee little Sancho, that thou art the veryest rascall that is in all Spaine: tell me theefe and vagabond, didst not thou but even very now say unto mee, that this Princesse was turned into a Damsell, and that called Dorotea? and that the heade which I thought I had slashed from a giants shoulders, was the whore which bore thee? with a thousand other follies, which did plunge mee into the greatest confusion that ever I was in, in my life? I vow (and then he looked upon heaven, and did crash his teeth together) that I am about to make such a wracke on thee, as shall beate wit into the pates of all the lying Squires that shall ever hereafter serve Knights Errant in this world. I pray you have patience, good my Lord, answered Sancho, for it may very well befall me, to bee deceived in that which toucheth the transmutation of the Ladie and Princesse Micomicona: but in that which concerneth the Giants head, or at least the boaring of the wine bagges, and that the blood was but red wine, I am not deceived I sweare. For the bagges lie yet wounded there within at your owne beds head: and the red wine hath made a lake in the Chamber: and if it bee not so, it shall be perceived at the frying of the egges, I meane, that you shall see it, when Master Inkeepers worship, who is heere present, shall demand the losse and dammage: I say thee, Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote, that thou art a mad-cap: pardon me, and so it is enough. It is enough indeed quoth Don Fernando: and therefore let me intreate you to say no more of this: and seeing my Ladie the Princesse saies she will goe away to morrow, seeing it is now to

CHAPTER
X

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the famous
Princesse
Micomicona,
with other
delightfull
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.

late to depart to day, let it be so agreed on, and we will spend this night in pleasant discourses, untill the approach of the insuing day, wherein wee will all accompany and attend on the worthy Knight Sir Don-Quixote, because we would be eye-witnesses of the valorous and unmatched feates of armes, which he shall doe in the pursuit of this weightie enterprize, which hee hath taken upon him : I am hee that will serve and accompany you good my Lord, replied Don-Quixote, and I doe highly gratifie the honour that is done me, and the good opinion that is held of me, the which I will indeavour to verifie and approove, or it shall cost mee my life, or more, if more it might cost mee.

Many other words of complement and gratification past betweene Don-Quixote and Don Fernando: but a certaine passenger imposed silence to them all, by his arrivall to the Inne, in that very season, who by his attire shewed that hee was a Christian newly returned from among the Moores, for he was apparellled with a short skirted cassocke of blew cloth, sleeves reaching downe halfe the arme, and without a coller: his breeches were likewise of blew linnen, and he wore a bonnet of the same colour, a payre of date colour buskins, and a Turkish Cimitar hanging at his necke in a scarfe: which went athwart his brest: there entred after him riding on an Asse a woman clad like a Moore, and her face covered with a piece of the vaile of her head, she wore on her head a little cap of cloath of gold, and was covered with a little Turkish mantle, from the shoulders downe to the feete. The man was of strong and comely making, of the age of fortie yeeres or there abouts, his face was somewhat tanned, he had long Mostacheos, and a very handsome beard. To conclude, his making was such as if he were well attired, men would take him to be a person of quality, and good birth: he demaunded a Chamber as soone as hee had entred: and being answered that there was no one vacant in the Inne, he seemed to bee grieved: and comming to her which in her attire devoted her selfe to be a Moore, he tooke her downe from her Asse. Luscinda, Dorotea, the hostesse, her daughter, and Mariternes, allured to behold the new and strange attire of the Moore, compassed her

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

about and Dorotea, who was alwaies most gracious, courteous, and discrete, deeming that both she and he that had brought her, were discontented for the want of a lodg-
ing she said. Ladie be not grieved for the trouble you are
heere like to endure for want of meanes to refresh your selfe,
seeing it is an universall and usuall vice of all Innes to be
defective herein: yet notwithstanding if it shall please you
to passe away the time among us (pointing to Luscinda) perhaps you have met in the discourse of your travels, other
worse places of intertainment then this shall prove. The
disguised Lady made none answere, nor other thing then
arising from the place wherein shee sate, and setting both
her hands a crosse on her bosome, she inclined her head, and
bowed her bodie in signe that she rendred them thanks:
by her silence they doubtlesly conjectured her to bee a
Moore, and that she could not speake the Castilian tongue.
In this the captive arrived who was otherwise employed
untill then, and seeing that they all had invironed her that
came with him, and that she made no answere to their
speech, he said. Ladies this maiden scarce understands my
tongue yet, nor doth she know any other then that of her
owne Countrey; and therefore she hath not, nor can make
any answere to your demaunds. We demand nothing of
her, quoth Luscinda, but onely doe make her an offer of our
companies for this night, and part of her roume where we
our selves are, shall be accommodated, where she shall be
cherished up as much as the commodity of this place, and
the Obligation wherein wee bee tied to shew courtesies to
strangers that may want it, doe binde us, especially she
being a woman, to whom we may doe this service. Sweet
Lady I kisse your hands both for her and my selfe replied
the captive, and I do highly prize, as it deserveth, the
favor you have proffered, which in such an occasion, and
offred by such persons as you seeme to be, doth very plainly
shew how great it is. Tell me good Sir quoth Dorotea,
whether is this Lady a Christian or a Moore? for by her
attire and silence she makes us suspect that shee is, that we
would not wish she were. A Moore she is in attire and
body, answered the captive: but in mind she is a very

CHAPTER

X

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the famous
Princesse
Micomicona,
with other
delightfull
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER X

Wherin is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the famous
Princess
Micomicona,
with other
delightfull
adventures.

fervent Christian, for she hath very expresly desired to become one. Then she is not yet baptized? said Luscinda: there hath beene no oportunitie offered to us, quoth the captive, to christen her, since she departed from Argell, which is her Towne and Country: and since that time shee was not in any so eminent a danger of death, as might oblige her to be baptized, before shee were first instructed in al the ceremonies which our holy Mother the Church commandeth: but I hope shortly (if it shall please God) to see her baptized with that decency, which her quality and calling deserves, which is greater then her attire or mine makes shew of.

These words inflamed all the hearers with a great desire to know, who the Moore and her captive were; yet none of them would at that time intreate him to satisfie their longing, because the season rather invited them to take som order how they might rest after their travailes, then to demaund of them the discourse of their lives. Dorotea then taking her by the hand, caused her to sit downe by her selfe, and prayed her to take off the veile from her face: shee instantly beheld the Captive, as if shee demaunded of him, what they said; and hee in the Arabicall language told her, how they desired her to discover her face, and bad her to doe it, which presently shee did, and discovered so beautifull a visage, as Dorotea esteemed her to bee fairer then Luscinda, and Luscinda prized her to excell Dorotea: and all the beholders perceived, that if any one could surpass them both in beautie, it was the Moore; and there were some that thought shee excelled them both in some respects. And as beautie hath evermore the prerogative and grace to reconcile mens minds, and attract their wils to it; so all of them forthwith dedicated their desires to serve and make much of the lovely Moore. Don Fernando demaunded of the Captive, how shee was called: and hee answered, that her name was Lela Zoraida, and as soone as shee heard him, and understood what they had demaunded, shee suddenly answered with anguish, but yet with a very good grace, no, not Zoraida, but Maria, Maria, giving them to understand that shee was called Maria, and not Zoraida.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

These words and the great affect and vehemensie where-withall the Moore delivered them, extorted more then one teare from the hearers, especially from the woman, who are naturally tender hearted and compassionate. Luscinda embrased her then with great love, and said. I, I, Maria, Maria, to which shee answered, I, I, Maria; Zoraida man-cange: that is, and not Zoraida. By this it was growen some foure of the clocke in the afternoone, and by order of those which were Don Ferdinados companions, the In-keeper had provided for them as good a beaver as the Inne could in any wise affoord unto them. Therefore it being the houre, they sate downe all together at a long table, for there was never a square or round one in all the house, and they gave the first and principall end (although hee refused it as much as hee could) to Don-Quixote, who commaunded that the Ladie Micomicona should sit at his elbow, seeing he was her champion, presently were placed Luscinda, and Zoraida, and Don Fernando, and Cardenio right over against them, and after the Captive and other Gentlemen, and on the other side the Curate and Barber: and thus they made their drinking with very great recreation, which was the more augmented to see Don-Quixote, leaving of his meate, and moved by the like spirit of that which had made him once before talke so much to the Goate-heards, beginne to offer them an occasion of speech in this manner:

Truely, good Sirs, if it be well considered, those which professe the order of Knight-hood, doe see many great, and unexpected things. If it bee not so, say, what mortall man alive is there, that entring in at this Castle gate, and seeing of us all in the manner we be now present here, can judge and beleieve that we are those which wee be? who is it that can say, that this Ladie which sits here at my sleeve, is the great Queene that wee all know her to bee, and that I am that Knight of the heavie Countenance, that am so much blab'd of abroad by the mouth of fame? therefore it cannot be now doubted, but that this art and exercise excelleth all the others which ever humane wit, the underminer of Nature invented, and it is

CHAPTER
X
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the famous
Princesse
Micomicona,
with other
delightfull
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

X

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the famous
Princesse
Micomicona,
with other
delightfull
adventures.

the more to be prized, by how much it expositeth it selfe, more then other trades, to dangers and inconveniences. Away with those that shall affirme learning to surpassee armes, for I will say unto them, be they what they list, that they know not what they say. For the reason which such men doe most urge, and to which they most relye, is, that the travales of the spirit doe farre exceed those of the body: and that the use of armes are onely exercised by the body, as if it were an office fit for porters, for which nothing were requisite but bodily forces, or as if in that which wee that professe it doe call armes, were not included the acts of Fortitude, which require deepe understanding to execute them, or as if the Warriours minde did not labour as well as his body, who had a great armie to leade and command, or the defence of a besieged Citie. If not, see if hee can arrive by his corporall strength, to know or sound the intent of his enemy, the designes, stratagems, and difficulties, how to prevent imminent dangers, all these being operations of the understanding, wherein the body hath no meddling at all: it being therefore so, that the exercise of armes require spirit as well as those of learning; let us now examine which of the two spirits, that of the Scholler, or Souldier, doe take most paine? and this may bee best understood by the end, to which both of them are addressed, for that intention is most to be esteemed, which hath for object the most Noble end. The end and conclusion of learning is, I speake not now of Divinitie whose scope is to leade and addresse souls to heaven, for to an end so much without end as this, no other may be compared, I meane of humane sciences and arts, to maintaine distributive justice in his perfection, and give to every one that which is his owne: to indeavour and cause good Lawes to bee religiously observed; an end most certainly, generous, high, and worthy of great praise: but not of so much as that, to which the exercise of armes is annexed, which hath for his object and end, peace: which is the greatest good men can desire in this life: and therefore the first good newes that ever the world had, or men received, were those which the Angels brought on that night which

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

was our day when they sung in the skies: ‘Glorie bee in the heights, and peace on earth, to men of good mindes.’ And the salutation which the best Master that ever was on earth or in heaven, taught to his Disciples and favourites, was that, when they entred into any house, they should say, ‘Peace be to this house’: and many other times hee said, ‘I give unto you my peace; I leave my peace unto you: peace bee amongst you’: It is a good, as precious as a jewell, and a gift given, and left by such a hand: a jewell, without which neither on earth or in heaven can there be any perfect good. This peace is the true end of warre, for armes, and warre are one and the selfe same things. This truth being therefore presupposed, that the end of warre is peace, and that herein it doth excell the end of learning: let us descend to the corporall labours of the Scholler, and to those of him which professeth armes, and consider which of them are more toilesome.

Don-Quixote did prosecute his discourse in such sort, and with so pleasing termes, as he had almost induced his audients to esteeme him, to be at that time at least, exempt from his frensie: and therefore by reason that the greater number of them were Gentlemen, to whom the use of armes is in a manner essential and proper, they did willingly listen to him, and therefore hee continued on with his discourse in this manner. I say then that the paines of the Student are commonly these: principally poverty (not that I would maintaine that all Students are poore, but that I may put the case in the greatest extremity it can have) and by saying that he may be poore, mee thinks there may bee no greater aggravation of his misery. For he that is poore, hath no perfection: and this poverty is suffered by him sundry waies, sometimes by hunger, other times by cold or nakednesse, and many times by all of them together. Yet it is never so extreme, but that he doth eate, although it be somewhat later then the custome; or of the scraps and reversion of the rich man: and the greatest misery of the Student is that which they terme, to live by saps and pottage: and though they want fire of their owne, yet may they have recourse to their

CHAPTER
X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

X

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, with other delightfull adventures.

Neighbours chimney, which if it doe not warme, yet will it weaken the cold ; and finally, they sleepe at night under a roofe. I will not descend to other trifles, to wit, the want of shirts and shoes, the barenesse of their clothes, or the overloading of their stomacks with meate, when good fortune lends them as good a meale : for by this way which I have decyphered so rough and difficult, stumbling here, falling there, getting up againe on the other side, and refalling on this, they attaine the degree which they have desired so much, which many having compassed as wee have seene, which having passed through these difficulties, and sailed by Scylla and Charibdis (borne away flying in a manner by favourable fortune) they command and governe all the world from a chaire, turning their hunger into societie, their nakednesse into pompe, and their sleeping on a matte, into a sweet repose among Hollands and Damaske : a reward justly merited by their Vertue ; but their labours confronted and compared to those of the militant Souldier, remaine very far behinde, as I will presently declare.

CHAPTER XI

Treating of the curious discourse made by
Don-Quixote upon the exercises of
Armes and Letters.



ON-QUIXOTE continuing his discourse, said. Seeing wee beginne in the Student with poverty and her parts, let us examine whether the Souldier bee richer ? certainly wee shall finde, that no man can exceede the Souldier in poverty it selfe. For hee is tyed to his wretched pay which comes either late or never : or else to his owne shifts with notable danger of his life

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and conscience, and his nakednesse is oft-times so much, as many times a leather jerken gashed, serves him at once for a shirt and an ornament: and in the midst of winter he hath sundry times no other defence or helpe to resist the inclemencies of the aire in the midst of the open fields, then the breath of his mouth; which I verily beleeve doth against nature come out cold, by reason it sallies from an emptie place: expect there till the night fall, that hee may repaire all these discommodities, by the easinessse of his bed, the which if it be not through his owne default, shall never offend in narrownesse, for hee may measure out for it on the earth as many foot as he pleaseth, and tumble himselfe up and downe in it, without indangering the wrinckling of his sheetes. Let after all this the day and houre arrive, wherein he is to receive the degree of his profession. Let, I say, a day of battaile arrive, for there they will set on his head the Cappe of his dignitie, made of lints to cure the wound of some bullet that hath past throw and throw his temples, or hath maimed an arme or a legge, and when this doth not befall, but that heaven doth piously keepe and preserve him whole and sound; hee shall perhaps abide still in the same poverty wherein he was at the first; and that it bee requisite that one and another battell doe succeed, and he come of ever a victour, to the end that he may prosper, and be at the last advanced. But such miracles are but few times wrought, and say, good Sirs, if you have noted it, how few are those which the warres reward, in respect of the others that it hath destroyed? you must answe without question, that there can bee no comparision made betweene them, nor can the dead be reduced to any number, but all the living and such as are advanced, may be counted easily with three arithmeticall figures; all which fals out contrary in learned men, for all of them have wherewithall to entertaine and maintaine themselves by skirts, I will say nothing of sleeves: So that although the Souldiers labour is greater, yet is his reward much lesse. But to this may be answered, that it is easier to reward two hundred thousand learned men, then thirty thousand Souldiers; for they may be advanced by giving unto them

CHAPTER
XI

Treating of
the curious
discourse
made by Don-
Quixote upon
the exercises
of Armes and
Letters.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XI

Treating of
the curious
discourse
made by Don
Quixote upon
the exercises
of Armes and
Letters.

offices which must of necessity be bestowed on men of their profession : but Souldiers cannot bee recompensed otherwise then by the Lords substance and wealth whom they serve ; and yet this objection and impossibility doth fortifie much more my assertion.

But leaving this apart which is a labyrinth of very difficult issue, let us returne to the preeminency of armes over learning, which is a matter hitherto depending, so many are the reasons that every one alleageth for himselfe : and among those which I my selfe have repeated, then learning doth argue thus for it selfe, that armes without it cannot be long maintained, for as much as the warre hath also lawes, and is subject to them, and that the lawes are contayned under the title of learning, and belong to learned men. To this objection, Armes doe make answeare, that the lawes cannot be sustained without them, for commonwelths are defended by armes, and Kingdomes preserved, Citties fenced, high waies made safe, the Seas freed from Pirates : and to be briefe, if it were not for them, Commonwelths, Kingdomes, Monarchies, Citties, and wayes by Sea and Land, would be subject to the rigour and confusion which attendeth on the warre all the time that it indureth, and is licensed to practise his prerogatives and violence : And it is a knowne truth, that it which cost most, is or ought to bee most accounted of, that one may become eminent in learning, it costs him time, watchings, hunger, nakednesse, head-aches, rawnesse of stomake, and other such inconveniences, as I have partly mentioned already. But that one may arrive by true termes to be a good Souldier, it costs him al that it costs the Student, in so exceeding a degree, as admits no comparison, for he is at every steppe in jeoperdie to lose his life. And what feare of necessity, or poverty, may befall or molest a Student so fiercely as it doth a Souldier, who seeing himself at the siege of some impregnable place, and standing Centinell in some Raveline or halfe Moone, feeles the enemies undermining neere to the place where he is, and yet dares not to depart or abandon his stand, upon any occasion whatsoever, or shun the danger which so nearely threatens him ; but that which he only

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

may doe, is to advise his Captaine of that which passeth, to the end hee may remedy it by some countermine, whilst he must stand stil fearing and expecting when he shal suddenly fly up to the cloudes without wings, and after descend to the depths against his will. And if this appeare to be but a small danger, let us way whether the grapling of two gallies, the one with the other in the midst of the spacious Maine, may be compared, or doe surpassee it, the which nailed and graped fast the one to the other, the Soldier hath no more roome in them, then two foot broad of a planke on the battaillings, and notwithstanding, although he clearly see laid before him so many ministers of death, for all the peeces of artillery that are planted on the ad-verse side, doe threaten him, and are not distant from his body the length of a launce: and seeing that if he slipt ever so little aside, he should fall into the deepes; doth yet neverthelesse with undaunted heart, borne away on the wings of honour, which spurreth him onward, oppose himselfe as a worke to all their shot, and strives to passe by that so narrow a way into the enemies vessel: And what is most to bee admired, is to behold how scarce is one fallen into that place; from whence hee shall never after arise untill the worldes end, when another takes possession of the same place: and if he doe likewise tumble into the Sea, which gapes like an enemy for him also, another and another will succeed unto him, without giving any respite to the times of their death, valour, and boldnesse, which is the greatest that may be found among all the traunces of warfare. Those blessed ages were fortunate, which wanted the dreadfull furie of the divelish and murdering peeces of Ordinance, to whose inventor I am verily perswaded that they render in hell an eternall guerdon for his Diabolicall invention; by which he hath given power to an infamous, base, vile and dastardly arme, to bereave the most valorous Knight of life; and that without knowing how or from whence, in the midst of the stomachacke and courage that inflames and animates valorous mindes, there arrives a wandring bullet (shot off perhaps by him that was affraid, and fledde at the very blaze of the powder, as he discharged

CHAPTER XI

Treating of
the curious
discourse
made by Don-
Quixote upon
the exercises
of Armes and
Letters.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XI

Treating of
the curious
discourse
made by Don-
Quixote upon
the exercises
of Armes and
Letters.

the accursed engine) and cuts off and finisheth in a moment the thoughts and life of him who merited to enjoy it many ages.

And whilst I consider this I am about to say that it grieves me to have ever undertaken the exercise of a Knight Errant in this our detestable age; for although no danger can affright me, yet notwithstanding I live in jealousie to thinke how powder and Lead might deprive me of the power to make my selfe famous and renouned by the strength of mine arme, and edge of my sword throughout the face of the earth. But let heaven dispose as it pleaseth: for so much the more shal I be esteemed, if I can compasse my pretensions, by how much the dangers were greater, to which I opposed my selfe, then those atchieved in foregoing times by Knights adventurous.

Don-Quixote made all this prolix speech, whilst the rest of his company did eat, wholly forgetting to taste one bit, although Sancho Pança did now and then put him in remembrance of his victuals, saying that hee should have leisure enough after, to speake as much as he could desire. In those that had heard, was againe renued a kinde of compassion, to see a man of so good a witte as he seemed to be, and of so good discourse in all the other matters which he tooke in hand, to remaine so cleerely devoyd of it, when any occasion of speech were offered, treating of his accursed Chivalrie. The Curate applauded his discourse, affirming that hee produced very good reasons for al that he had spoken in the favour of armes, and that hee himselfe (although he was learned and Graduated) was likewise of his opinion. The Beaver being ended, and the table clothes taken away, whilst Maritornes did helpe her Mistresse and her daughter to make ready the roome where Don-Quixote had slept for the Gentlewomen, wherein they alone might retire themselves that night. Don Fernando intreated the captive to recount unto them the history of his life, for as much as he suspected that it must have beeene rare and delightfull, as he gathered by the tokens he gave, by comming in the lovely Zoraydas companie. To which the captive replied, that he would accomplish his desire

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

with a very good will, and that onely he feared that the discourse would not proove so savory as they expected. But yet for all that he would tell it, because hee would not disobey him: the Curate and all the rest thanked him for his promise, and turned to request him againe to begin his discourse; and he perceiving so many to sollicite him, said, that prayers were not requisite, when commaundements were of such force: and therefore I desire you, quoth he, to be attentive, and you shall heare a true discourse, to which perhaps no fained invention may be compared for variety or delight. The rest animated by these his words, did accommodate themselves with very great silence, and he beholding their silence and expectation of his history, with a modest and pleasing voyce, began in this manner.

CHAPTER
XI
Treating of
the curious
discourse
made by Don-
Quixote upon
the exercises
of Armes and
Letters.

CHAPTER XII

Wherein the Captive recounteth his life, and other accidents.



Na certain Village of the Mountaines of Lion, my lineage had beginning, wherewithall nature dealt much more liberally then fortune, although my father had the opinion amidst the penury and poverty of that people, to be a rich man, as indeed he might have beeene, had he but used as much care to hoard up his wealth, as prodigality to spend it. And this his liberal disposition proceeded from his being a souldier in his youthfull yeares: for warre is the schoole wherein the miser is made francke, and the francke man prodigall: and if among souldiers we finde some wretches and niggards, they are accounted Monsters which are seldome seene. My father passed the bounds of liberality, and touched very neerely the confines

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

of prodigality; a thing nothing profitable for a married man, who had children that should succeed him in his name and being. My father had three sonnes, all men, and of yeares sufficient to make an election of the state of life they meanted to lead. Wherefore he perceiving as he himselfe was wont to say, that he could not bridle his nature in that condition of spending, he resolved to deprive himselfe of the instrument and cause, which made him such a spender and so liberall, to wit, of his goods ; without which Alexander the great himselfe would be accounted a miser ; and therefore calling us all three together on a day into his chamber, he used these or such like reasons to us.

Sonnes, to affirme that I love you well, may be presumed, seeing I terme you my sonnes : and yet it may be suspected that I hate you, seeing I doe not governe my selfe so well as I might, in the husbanding and increasing of your stocke. But, to the end that you may from henceforth perceive that I doe affect you with a fatherly love, and that I meane not to overthrow you like a step-father, I will doe one thing to you which I have pondered, and with mature deliberation purposed these many daies : You are all of age to accept an estate, or at least to make choice of some such exercise, as may turne to your honour and profite at riper yeares : and therefore that which I have thought upon, is to devide my goods into foure parts ; the three I will bestow upon you, to every one that which appertaines to him, without exceeding a jot, and I my selfe will reserve the fourth, to live and maintaine me with as long as it shall please heaven to lend mee breath. Yet I doe greatly desire that after every one of you is possest of his portion, hee would take one of the courses which I meane to propose. There is an old proverbe in this our Spaine, in mine opinion very true, (as ordinarily all proverbs are, being certaine briefe sentences collected out of long and discreet experiences) and it is this ; ‘The Church, the Sea, or the Court’ : The meaning whereof is, That whosoever would become wealthy, or worthy, must either follow the Church, haunte the Seas by exercising the trade of Merchandizes, or get him a place of service, and entertainment in the Kings house, for men say,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that 'A Kings crumme is more worth then a Lords loafe.' CHAPTER
This I say, because I desire, and it is my will, that one of XII
you doe follow his booke, another merchandize, and the third Wherein
the warre; seeing that the service of his owne house is a
difficult thing to compasse. And although the warre is
not wont to inrich a man, yet it addes unto him great
worth and renoune. Within these eight dayes I doe meane
to give you all your portions in money, without defrauding
you of a mite, as you shall see in effect. Therefore tell me
now whether you meane to follow mine opinion and advice
in this which I have proposed. And then he commaunded
me by reason that I was the eldest, to make him an answere.

I, after I had intreated him not to make away his goods,
but to spend and dispose of them as hee listed, seeing that
we were both young and able enough to gaine more; at
last I concluded that I would accomplish his will, and that
mine was to follow the wars, therein serving God and my
King together. The second brother made the same offer,
and employing his portion in commodities, would venter it to
the Indias. The youngest, and as I deeme, the discreetest,
said, that either he would follow the Church, or goe at the
least to Salamanca to finish his already commenced studies.
And as soone as we had ended the agreement and election
of our vocations, my father embrased us all, and afterwards
performed unto us, in as short a time as he had mentioned,
all that hee promised; giving unto each of us a portion,
amounting, if I doe well remember, to three thousand
duckats a piece in money: for an uncle of ours bought
all the goods, and paide ready money, because he would
not have them made away from our owne familie and
lineage. We all tooke our leaves of our good father in
one day, and in that instant it seeming to me a great
inhumanity to leave my father so old, and with so little
meanes; I dealt so with him, as I constrainyd him to take
backe againe two thousand duckats of the three he had
given me, for as much as the rest was sufficient to furnish
me in very good sort with all things requisite for a souldier.
My brothers, moved by mine example, did each of them
give him a thousand crownes: so that my father remained

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

with foure thousand crownes in money, and three in goods, as they were valued; which goods hee would not sell, but keepe them still in stocke. Finally, we bad him (and our said uncle) farewell, not without much feeling and many teares on both sides: and they charged us that we would from time to time acquaint them with our successes, whether prosperous or adverse. We promised to performe it, and then embracing us, and giving us his blessing, one departed towards Salamanca, another to Sivill, and my selfe to Alicante. I arrived prosperously at Genova, and from thence went to Milaine, where I did accommodate my selfe with armes, and other braveries used by souldiers, and departed from thence to settle my selfe in Piemonte, and being in my way towards the Citie of Alexandria de la Paglia, I heard newes that the great Duke of Alva did passe towards Flanders. Wherefore changing my purpose, I went with him, and served him in all the expeditions he made: I was present at the beheading of the Earles of Egmont and Hornes, and obtained at last to be Ensigne to a famous Captaine of Guada-lajara, called Diego de Urbina. Within a while after mine arrivall to Flanders the newes were divulged of the league that Pius Quintus the Pope, of famous memory, had made with the Venetians, and the King of Spaine, against our common enemy the Turke, who had gayned by force the famous Island of Cypres, much about the same time, which Island belonged to the State of Venice, and was an unfortunate and lamentable losse. It was also certainly knowne, that the most noble Don Iohn of Austria, our good King Don Philips naturall Brother, did come downe for generall of this League, and the great provision that was made for the warre was published every where.

Al this did incite and stirre on my minde and desire to be present at that expedition so much expected: and therefore although I had conjectures, and halfe promises to bee made a Captaine in the first occasion that should be offered, yet I resolved to leave all those hopes, and goe into Italie, as in effect I did. And my good fortune so disposed, as the Lord Don Iohn of Austria arrived just at the same

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

time at Genova, and went towards Naples, to joyne himselfe with the Venetian Navie, as he did after at Messina. In this most fortunate journey I was present, being by this made a Captaine of foote: to which honourable charge, I was mounted rather by my good fortune, then by my deserts. And that very day which was so fortunate to all Christendome; for therein the whole world was undeceived, and all the nations thereof freed of all the errore they held, and beliefe they had, that the Turke was invincible at Sea: in that very day I say, wherein the swelling stomacke, and Ottomanicall pride was broken among so many happy men as were there (for the Christians that were slaine were much more happy then those which they left victorious alive) I alone was unfortunat, seeing that in exchange of some Naval Crowne, which I might expect, had I lived in the times of the auncient Romanes, I found my selfe, the night ensuing that so famous a day, with my legges chained, and my hands manacled, which befell in this manner: that Uchali King of Argiers, a bolde and venturous Pirate, having invested and distressed the Admirall of Malta (for onely three Knights remained alive, and those very sore wounded) Iohn Andreas chife Gallie came to her succour, wherein I went with my company: and doing what was requisit in such an occasion, I leapt into the enemies vessell, the which falling off from that which had assaulted her, hindred my souldiers from following me; by which means I saw my selfe alone amidst mine enemies, against whom I could make no long resistance, they were so many. In fine, I was taken full of wounds. Now as you may have heard, Uchali saved himselfe and all his squadron, whereby I became captive in his power, and onely remained sorrowfull among so many joyfull, and captive among so many freed: for that day fifteene thousand Christians, which came slaves and inchained in the Turkish Gallies recovered their desired liberty. I was carried to Constantinople, where the great Turke Selim, made my Lord Generall of the Sea, by reason that he had so well performed his duety in the battell, having brought away, for a witnesse of his valour the Standard, of the

CHAPTER XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

Order of Malta. I was the yeere insuing of 1572, in Navarino, rowing in the Admirall of the *three Lanthornes*, and saw and noted there the oportunity that was lost, of taking all the Turkish Navie within the haven: for all the Genisaries and other souldiers that were in it, made full account, that they should be set upon, even within the very Port, and therefore trussed up all their baggage, and made ready their shoes, to flie away presently to the land, being in no wise minded to expect the assault, our Navie did strike such terrour into them. But God disposed otherwise of the matter, not through the fault or negligence of the Generall that governed our men, but for the sinnes of Christendome, and because God permits and wils, that we have alwaies some executioners to chastice us. In summe, Uchali got into Modon, which is an Island neere to Navarino, and landing his men there, he fortified the mouth of the haven, and there remained untill Don Iohn departed. In this voyage was taken the Gally called *Presa*, whereof the famous Pirate Barbarossas his sonne was Captaine: it was surprised by the head Galley of Naples called the *Shee Wolfe*, that was commaunded by the thunderbolt of warre, the father of souldiers, that fortunate and never overthowrne Don Alvaro de Baçan, the Marquesse of Sancta Cruez. And here I will not forget to recount what befell at the taking of the *Presa*: this sonne of Barbarossas was so cruell, and used his slaves so ill, that as soone as they that were rowing, perceived the *Shee Wolfe* to approach them, and that she had overtaken them, they cast away their Oares all at one time, and laying hands on their Captaine that stood on the *Poope, crying to them to row with more speede, and passing him from one bancke to another, from the Poope to the Prow, they tooke so many bits out of him, as he had scarce passed beyond the Mast, when his soule was already wasted to hell; such was the cruelty wherewithall he intreated them, and so great the hate they also bore towards him. We returned the next yeare after to Constantinople, being that of seventy and three, and there we learned how Don Iohn had gained Tunez, and taking that Kingdome away from

**Estanerol*,
p. 442.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the Turkes, had by installing Muley Hamet therein, cut away all Muley Hamedas hopes to raigne againe there, who was the most cruell and valiant Moore that ever lived.

The great Turke was very much grieved for this losse, and therefore using the sagacity wherewithall all his race were indued, he made peace with the Venetians, which wished for [it] much more then he did himselfe: and the yeare after of seventy and four he assaulted the fortresse of Goleta, and the other fortresse that Don Iohn had raised neere unto Tunez: and in all these occasions I was present, tyed to the Oare, without any hope of liberty; at leastwise by ransome, being resolved never to signifie by letter my misfortunes to my father. The Goleta was lost in fine, and also the Fortresse, before which two places lay in siege seventy five thousand Turkes, and more then four hundred thousand Moores, and other Sarasins of all the other parts of Affrica, being furnished with such abundance of munition and warlike engines, and so many Pioners as were able to cover Goleta and the Fortresse, if every one did cast but his handfull of earth upon them. Thus was Goleta, accounted untill then impregnable, first lost, the which did not happen through default of valour in the defendants, who in defence thereof did all they could, or ought to have done; but because experience shewed the facility wherewithall trenches might be raised in that desert send; for though water had beene found in it within two spannes depth, the Turkes could not finde it in the depth of two yeards; and therefore filling many sacks full of sand, they raised their trenches so high, as they did surmount the walls of the sconce, and did so gall the defendants from them with their shot, as no one could stand to make any defence: it was a common report, that our men would not immure themselves within Goleta, but expect the enemy in the champaine, at their disembarquing: but those that gave this out, spake widely, as men very little acquainted with the like affaires: for if in Goleta and the Fortresse, there were scarce seven thousand Souldiers, how could so few a number, were they ever so resolute, make a sallie, and

CHAPTER
XII
Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

remaine in the Forts, against so great a number of enemies ? or how is it possible, that the forces which are not seconded and supplyed, should not be overcome, specially being besieged by many, and obstinate enemies, and those in their owne Countrey ? But many others esteemed, and so did I likewise among the rest, that almighty God did a particular grace and favour unto Spaine, in that manner permitting to be destroied the stop and cloake of all wickednesse ; and the sponge and Moath of innumerable summes of money spent there unprofitably, without serving to any other end, then to preserve the memory of being gayned by the Emperour Charles the fist, as if it had beene requisite for the keeping of it eternall (as it is, and shall bee ever) that those stones should sustaine it. The Fortresse was also wonne, but the Turkes were constrained to gaine it, span by spanne : for the Souldiers which defended it, fought so manfully and resolutely, as the number of the enemies slaine in two and twenty generall assaults which they gave unto it, did passe five and twenty thousand. Never a one was taken prisoner, but three hundred, which survived their fellowes : a certayne and manifest token of their valour and strength, and how well they had defended themselves and kept their fortresses.

A little Fort or turret that stood in the midst of the place, under the command of Don John Zanoguera, a Valentian Gentleman, and famous Souldier, was yeelded upon composition, and Don Pedro de Puertocarrero, Generall of Goleta, was taken prisoner, who omitted no diligence possible to defend the place : but yet was so grieved to have lost it, as he dyed for very grieve on the way towards Constantinople, whither they carried him Captive. The Generall likewise of the Fort, called Gabriel Cerbellon, being a Gentleman of Milan, and a great enginer, and most resolute Souldier, was taken : and there dyed in both the places many persons of worth, among which, Pagan de Oria was one, a Knight of the order of Saint Iohn, of a most noble disposition, as the exceeding liberalitie which he used towards his brother the famous Iohn Andrea de Oria clearly demonstrates, and that which rendred his death more deplorable, was,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that he was slaine by certaine Sarracines (which he trusted, perceiving how the Fort was lost) who had offered to convey him thence in the habit of a Moore to Tabarca, which is a little haven or creeke possest by the Genevoises, that fish for Corral in that coast. These Sarracens cut off his head, and brought it to the Generall of the Turkish armie, who did accomplish in them the Spanish proverbe ; ‘That although the treason pleaseth, yet is the Traitor hated’ : and so it is reported, that he commanded those to bee hanged that had brought him the present, because they had not brought it alive.

Among the Christians that were lost in the Fort, there was one called Don Pedro de Aguilar, borne in Andulizia, in some Towne whose name I have forgotten, he had beene Auncient in the Fortresse, and was a Souldier of great account, and of a rare understanding, and specially had a particular grace in Poetrie : this I say, because his fortune brought him to be slave to my Patron, even into the very same Galley and bench whereon I sate. This Gentleman made two Sonnets in forme of Epitaphs ; the one for the Goleta, the other for the Fort : and I will repeate them, because I remember them very well, and doe beleeve that they will be rather gratefull, then any thing disgustfull to the audients ; as soone as ever the Captive named Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando beheld his Camaradas, and they all three did smile : and when he beganne to talke of the Sonnets, one of them said, before you passe further, I beseech you good Sir let me intreat you to tell me, what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar, whom you have named ? that which I know of that affaire, answered the Captive, is, that after he had beene two yeares in Constantinople, he fled away in the attire of an Armenian, with a Greeke spie, and I cannot tell whether he recovered his liberty, or no ; although I suppose he did : for within a yeare after I saw the Greeke in Constantinople, but I had not the oportunity to demaund of him, the successe of that voyage. He came then into Spaine, quoth the Gentleman : for that same Don Pedro is my brother, and dwels now at home in our owne Towne, very well, rich, married, and a Father of three Sonnes. God bee

CHAPTER
XII
Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life,
and other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XII

Wherein
the Captive
recounteth
his life, etc.

thanked, quoth the Captive, for the infinite favour he hath shewed unto him : for in mine opinion there is not on earth any contentment able to be compared to that of recovering a mans lost liberty. I doe moreover, said the Gentleman, know the Sonnets which my brother composed ; I pray you then, good Sir, quoth the Captive, repeate them : for perhaps you can say them better then I ; with a very good will, answered the Gentleman ; and that of the Goleta is thus.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the Captive.

A Sonnet.

O HAPPY soules, which from this mortall vaile Freed and exempted, through the good you wrought, Safe from the harmes, that here did you aasaile ; By your deserts, to hiest Heaven were brought. Which here inflam'd by wrath, and noble thought, Shewed how much your forces did availe : When both your owne and forraign bloods you taught From sandie shoares, into the deeps to traile. Your lives before your valours end, deceased In your tyr'd armes ; which though they were a dying And vanquisht ; yet on victorie have ceazed. And this your life from servile thraldome flying : Ending, acquires, betweene the sword and wall, Heavens glorie there, fame here on earth, for all.

I have it even in the very same manner, quoth the Captive : well then, said the Gentleman, that of the Fort is thus, if I doe not forget it :

A Sonnet.

From midst the barren earth, here overthrownne,
In these sad clods, which on the ground doe lie,
Three thousand souldiers holy soules are flow'n,
And to a happier mansion, gone on hie :

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Here when they did in vaine the vigour trie
Of their strong armes, to coste of many a one,
After the most through extreame toile did die :
The cruell Sword a few did light upon :
And this same plot eternally hath beene,
With thousand dolefull memories replete,
As well this age, as in foregoing time.
But from his cruell bosome Heav'n ne're yet
Receav'd sincerer soules, then were the last,
Nor earth so valiant bodies, aye possest.

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

The Sonnets were not disliked : and the Captive was greatly recreated with the newes which he received of his companion, and prosecuting his Historie, he said : The Goleta, and the Fort being rendred, the Turkes gave order to dismantell Goleta, for the Fort was left in such sort, as there remained nothing up that might be overthrown : and to do it with more brevity and lesse labour, they undermined it in three places, but that which seemed least strong, could not be blowen up by any of them, which was the old walles ; but all that which had remained a foote of the new fortifications and workes of Fratin, fell downe to the ground with great facility : and this being ended the Navie returned triumphant and victorious to Constantinople : where within a few moneths afterward my Lord Uchali died, whom they called Uchali Fartax, which signifies in the Turkish language, the scald or scurvie renegate, for he was such ; and it is a custome among the Turkes to give one another nicke names either of the defects, or perfections and vertues which they have, and the reason hereof is, that among them all they have but foure linages that have surnames, and these doe contend with that of Ottomanes, for Nobility of bloud : and all the rest, as I have said doe take denomination, sometime from the blemishes of the body, and sometime from the vertues of the minde : and this scurvie fellow did row foure teene yeares, being the great Turkes slave, and did renounce his faith, being foure and thirtie yeares old, for despight, and because he might be revenged on a Turke, that gave him a cuffe on the face as he rowed ; and his valour was so great, as without ascending by the dishonourable meanes and waies usually taken [by] the greatest minions about the great Turke,

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

he came first to be King of Argiers, and after to be Generall of the Sea, which is the third most Noble charge and dignitie of all the Turkish Empire. He was borne in Calabria, and was a good morall man, and used with great humanity his Slaves, whereof hee had above three thousand, which were after his death devided, as he had left in his Testament, betweene the great Turke (who is ever an inheritour to every dead man, and hath a portion among the deceased his children) and his runnegates. I fell to the lot of a Venetian runnegate, who being a shippe-boy in a certaine vessell, was taken by Uchali, who loved him so tenderly, as he was one of the dearest youthes he had, and he became after the most cruell runnegate that ever lived. He was called Azanaga, and came to be very rich, and King of Argiers : with him I came from Constantinople, somewhat contented in minde, because I should be nearer unto Spaine ; not for that I meanted to write unto any one of my unfortunate successe, but only to see whether fortune would prove more favourable to me in Argiers, then at Constantinople ; where I had attempted a thousand waies to escape, but none of them sorted unto any good effect : and I thought to search out in Argiers some other meanes to compasse that which I so greedily desired ; for the hope of attaining liberty sometime had never abandoned me ; and when in the contriving, I thought, or put my designes in practice, and that the successe did not answere mine expectation, presently without forsaking me, it forged and sought out for another hope, that might sustaine me, although it were debile, and weake.

With this did I passe away my life, shut up in a prison or house, which the Turkes call Bathes, wherein they doe inclose the Captive Christians, as well those that belong to the king, as other particular mens, and those which they call of the Almazen, which is as much to say, as slaves of the Counsell, who are deputed to serve the Citie in the publike workes and other affaires thereof, and these of all other Captives doe with most difficultie attaine to liberty ; for by reason they belong to the communalty, and have no particular master, there is none with whom a man may treate

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

of their redemption, although they should have the price of their ransom. To these Bathes, as I have said, some particular men carry their Captives to be kept, chiefly if they be to be ransomed ; for there they have them at their ease and secure, untill they be redeemed. The Kings Captives of ransome also, doe not goe forth to labour with the other poore crew, if it be not when the paying of their ransom is deferred ; for then, to the end they may make them write for money more earnestly, they make them labour, and goe to fetch wood with the rest, which is no small toyle and trouble. I then was one of those of ransome ; for as soone as it was knowne how I was a Captaine, notwithstanding that I told them of my little possibilite, and want of meanes, all could not prevaile to dissuade them from consorting me with the multitude of Gentlemen, and those of ransome : they put on me then a chaine, rather to be a token that I was there for my ransome, then to keepe me the better with it, and so I passed away my time there with many other Gentlemen, and men of marke, held and kept in there for their ransome. And although both hunger and nakednesse did vexe us now and then, or rather evermore, yet nothing did afflict us so much, as to heare and see every moment the cruelties that my master used towardeſ Christians. Every day he hanged up one, he set this man on a stake, and would cut off the others eares, and that, for so little occasion, or wholy without it, as the very Turks themselves perceived, that he did it not for any other cause, but because he had a will to doe it, and that it was his naturall inclination to be a homicide of all humane kind. Onely one Spanish soldier called such a one of Saavedra was in his good grace, who although hee did sundrie things that will remaine in the memorie of that Nation for many yeares, and all to the end to get his liberty ; yet he never strucke him, nor commaunded him to be stricken, nor said as much as an evill word unto him : and yet we all feared that hee should be broached on a stake for the least of many things which he did, and himselfe did also dread it more then once ; and if it were not that time denieth me leasure to doe it, I would recount unto you things done by this

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

souldier, which might both entertaine and astonish you much more then the relation of my life.

There were over the square court of our prison certaine windowes that looked into it, and belonged to a certaine rich and principall Moore ; the which windowes (as ordinarily are all the Moores windowes) rather seemed to be holes then windowes : and even these were also very closely covered and shut fast with linnen coverings. It therefore befell that standing one day upon the battlements of our prison with other three companions, trying which of us could leape best in his shakles to passe away the time, and being alone (for all the other Christians were gone abroad to labour) I lifted up by chance mine eyes, and I saw thrust out at one of those so close-shut windowes a cane, and a linnen tied at the end thereof, and the Cane was moved and wagged up and downe, as if it had made signes, that we should come and take it : we looked upon it, and one of my companions went under the cane, to see whether they would let it fall, or what they would doe else ; but as soone as he approached it, the Cane was lifted up, and did stirre it to eyther side, as if they had said (with wagging of the head) no ; the Christian returned to us ; and the Cane being eftsoones let fall, and beginning to move as it had done before, an other of my fellowes went, and the same succeeded unto him, that did to the first. Finally, the third approached it, with no better successe then the former two, which I perceiving, would not omit to trie my fortitude, and as soone as I came neere to stand under the Cane, it was let slip and fel within the Bathes just at my feete : I forthwith went to untie the linnen which was knotted, wherein I found tenne Zianiys, which are certaine peeces of base gold, used among the Moores, and worth each of them tenne rials of our money. I leave to your discretion to thinke if I was not glad of my bootie, certes my joy and admiration was much, to thinke whence that good might come unto us, but specially to my selfe, since the signes of refusall to let it fall to the other did confirme cleerly that the favour was only address to my selfe. I tooke my welcome money, broke the Cane, and returned to the battlements,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and viewed the window earnestly, and perceived a very beautifull hand issue out thereat, which did open and shut it againe very speedily. By which imagining and thinking that some woman that dwelled in that house, had done us the charitie and benefit, in token of our thankfull minds, we made our courtesies after the Moorish fashion, by inclining of our heads, bending of the bodie, and pressing our hands to our breasts; within a while after, there appeared out of the same window a little crosse made of Canes, which presently was taken in againe: this signe did confirme us in the opinion, that there was some Christian woman captive in that place, and that it was shee which did to us the courtesie: but the whitenesse of her hand, and her rich bracelets destroyed this presumption: although we did notwithstanding conjecture that it was some renegate Christian, whom their masters there do very ordinarily take to wives, yea and account verie good hap to light on one of them, for they are much more accounted of, then the women of the nation it selfe.

Yet in all these discourses we strayed very farre from the truth of the accident; and so from thence forward, all our passing of the time was employed in beholding that window as our North, wherein had appeared the starre of the Cane: but fifteene daies past over, or we could descrie either it, or the hand again, or any other signe. And although in the meane time we endevoured all that we might to know who dwelled in that house, or whether there were any renegate Christian therein, yet never a one could tell us any other things but that it belonged to a very rich and noble Moore, called Aguimorato who had beene Constable of the Pata, [a] dignitie among them of very great qualitie. But when we thought least that it would raine any more Zianiys by that way we saw the Cane suddenly to appeare, and an other linnen hanging on it, whose bulke was much greater: and this befell when the bath was freed of concourse, and void, as the other time before. We made the accustomed triall, every one approaching it before mee, but without effect, untill I came, for presently as I approached it, it was permitted to fall. I untied the knot and found inwreathed in it fortie

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

duckets of Spanish gold, with a letter written in the Arabian tongue, and at the end thereof was drawne a very great crosse. I kissed the crosse, tooke up the money, and returned againe to the battlements, and we altogether made our receivers; the hand also appeared, I made signes that I would reade the paper, and the window was shut incontinently. All of us were marvellously astonished, yet joyfull at that which had befalne us, and by reason that none of us understood the Arabian tongue, the desire that we had to understand the contents of the letter was surpassing great, but greater the difficultie to finde out some trustie person that might reade it. In the end I resolved to trust in this affaire a renegate of Murcia, who did professe himselfe to be my very great friend, and having by my liberality and other good turnes done secretly obliged him to be secret in the affaire wherein I would use him: for some renegates are accustomed, when they have an intention to turne into the Christian countries to bring with them the testimonies of the most principall captives, wherein they informe, and in the amplest manner they may, how the bearer is an honest man, and that he hath ever done many good turnes to the Christians, and that he hath himselfe a desire to escape by the first commoditie. Some renegates there are, which procure those testimonies sincerely, and with a good intention, others take the benefit of them, eyther by chance or industrie; who intending to goe and rob into the countries of Christians, if by chance they be astray or taken, bring forth their testimonies and say, that by those papers may be collected the purpose wherewithall they came, that is, to remaine in Christian countries, and that therefore they came abroad a pyrating with the other Turks: and by this meanes they escape that first brunt, and are reconciled againe to the Church, without receiving any harme at all: and when they espie their time doe returne againe into Barbarie, to be such as they were before. Others there are, which procure those writings with a pure intention, and doe after stay in Christian countries. Well this my friend was a renegate of his last kinde: who had the testimonies of all my companions, wherein we did commend him, as amply

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

as we could devise: and certainly if the Moores had found those papers about him, they would have burnt him for it. I understand how he could speake the Arabian tongue very perfectly, and not onely that alone, but also write it withall: yet before I would wholy breake my minde to him, I requested him to read me that scroule, which I had found by chance in a hole of my cabin: he opened it, and stood a good while beholding and construing thereof, murmuring somewhat betweene his teeth. I demaunded therefore of him whether he understood it? and he answered that he did, very well: and that if I desired to have it translated *verbatim*, I should bring unto him Pen and Ink, to the end he might do it more completely: we presently gave unto him that which he asked, and he did translate it by little and little; and having finisht it, he said; all that is heere in Spanish, is punctually without omitting a letter, the contentes of the Moorish paper, and here you must note, that where it sayes Lela Marien, it meanes our Ladie the blessed Virgine Marie. We read the paper, whereof the contents were these which ensue:

' When I was a child, my father had a certaine Christian woman captive, that taught mee in mine owne tongue all the Christian Religion, and told mee many things of Lela Marien. The Christian died, and I know shee went not to the fire, but, to Ala, for shee appeared to mee twice after her death, and bade me goe to the Christian countrey, to see Lela Marien, who loved mee much: I know not how I may goe: I have seene many Christians through this Window, and none of them hath seemed to mee a Gentleman but thy selfe: I am very beautifull and young, and I have a great deale of riches to carry away with me. See thou whether thou canst contrive the way how wee may depart, and thou shalt there be my husband, if thou pleaseest; and if thou wilt not, I doe not greatly care, for Lela Marien will provide mee of a husband. I wrote my selfe this billet, be therefore wary, whom thou trustest to reade it: doe not trust any Moore, for they are all of them deceiptfull traytours. It is this that grieves mee most

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

' of all, for I would not have thee, if it were possible, to dis-
' close the matter to any living bodie; for if my father did
' know it, hee would throw mee downe into a well, and
' oppresse mee in it with stones. I will hang a threede to
' the end of the Cane, and therein thou mayest tie thine
' answere. And if thou canst not write the Arabian, tell
' mee thy minde by signes, for Lela Marien will make mee
' to understand it. Who with Ala preserve thee, and this
' Crosse which I doe many times kisse, for so the Captive
' commauded me to doe.'

See, good Sir, if it was not great reason, that the reasons comprehended in this Letter should recreate and astonish us. And certainly the one and the other was so great, as the runnagate perceived well that the paper was not found by chance, but was really addressed unto some one of us: and therefore desired us earnestly, that if that were true which he suspected, that we would trust and tell it unto him, and he would adventure his life to procure our liberties: and saying this, he tooke out of his bosome a Crucifixe of mettle, and protested with very many teares by the God which that Image represented, in whom he, although a sinner and wicked man, did most firmly beleeve, that he would be most loyall and secret to us in all that which we would discover unto him; for it seemed to him, and he almost divined, that both himselfe and we all should recover our liberties by her meanes that did write the Letter: and he should then also see himselfe in the state which he most desired, to wit, in the bosome of his mother the holy Catholicke Church; from which, through his ignorance and sinne, he was departed and devided as an unprofitable and corrupt member. The Renegate said this with so many teares, and such evident tokens of repentance, as all of us consented to open our mindes unto him, and declare the truth of the matter; and so wee recounted unto him the whole discourse, without concealing any circumstance, and shewed unto him the window by which the Cane was wont to appeare, and he marked the house from thence, and rested with special charge to informe himselfe well of those

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that dwelled therein. We thought also that it was requisite to answer the Moorish Ladies Letter : and therefore having him present, that could so well performe that taske, we caused the renegate to draw out an answer presently as I did dilate it to him, which was punctually such as I will recount : for of all the most substantial points that befell me in that affaire, no one is falne out of my memorie, nor shall ever as long as I have breath. In effect that which I answered to the Moore, was this :

'The true Alà preserve you deere Ladie, and that blessed Marian, who is the true mother of God, and is she that hath put in your minde the desire to goe into the Christian Countries, because she doth love you wel : pray unto her that she will vouchsafe to instruct you, how you may bring the matter to passe, which she commaundeth you to doe : for she is so good, as she will easily descend to doe it. As for my part, I doe promise, as well for my selfe, as for these other Christians that are with me, to do for you all that we are able to doe untill death. Doe not omit to write unto me, and acquaint me with your purposes, and I will answer you every time : for great Alà hath given us a captive Christian, that can write and reade your language well, as you may perceive by this paper. So that you may securely, and without any dread, advise us of all that you shall thinke good. And as concerning that which you say, that you will become my wife, after we arrive to the Christian countries, I doe promise you the same, as I am a good Christian : and you shall understand that the Christians do accomplish their words far better then do the Moores. Alà and Marien his Mother preserve you my deerest Ladie.'

This Letter being written and inclosed, I expected two dayes, that the Bathes might be free of concourse, as it was wont, which assoone as it befel, I went up to my accustomed place of the battlements, to see whether the Cane appeared ; which was presently after thrust out at the window. And

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the Captive.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

soone as I perceived it, although I could not note who it was that set it, I shewed my paper, to give them warning to set on the threed : but it was already hanging thereon. To the which I tied the Letter, and within a while after beganne to appeare our Starre, with the white flagge of peace, and the knotted linnen ; which they let fall, and I tooke up, and I found therin in divers sorts of money and golde more then fiftie duckats, which redoubled our joyes more then fifty times, and confirmed the hope wee conceived of attayning libertie. The very same night our Renegate returned to us, and tolde, how he had learned that the very same Moore which wee were informed of before called Aguimorata dwelt there, and was excessive rich, and had one only daughter, the heire of all his goods ; of whom the common opinion throughout the citie was, that she was the fairest woman of all Barbarie : and that many of the Viceroyes that came there, had demaunded her to wife, but she would never condiscend to any motion of mariage : and that he likewise had understood that she had sometimes a Christian captive, which now was deceased : all which agreed with the contents of the Letter. We presently entred in counsell with the Renegate, about the meanes we were to use, to fetch away the Moore, and come all of us to Christian landes, and in the end we concluded to attend for that time, the second advice of Zoraida (for so was she then called, who now meanes to name her selfe Maria) for as much as we cleerely perceived that it was shee and none other that could minister to us the meanes to remove all these difficulties. After we had rested on this resolution, the Renegate bid us be of good courage, for he would ingage his life, or set us at liberty. Foure dayes after the Bathes were troubled with people : which was an occasion that the Cane appeared not all that while. But that impediment being removed and the accustomed solitude returned, the Cane did againe appeare with a linnen hanging thereat so grossly impregned, as it promised to be delivered of a most happie burden. Both cane and Linnen bent themselves to me, and in them I found another paper and a hundred duckats in golde, besides other small money. The Renegate was present,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and we gave him the Letter to reade, the effect whereof was this.

'I know not, good Sir, what order to give for our going into Spaine, nor hath Lela Marien tolde me any thing concerning it, although I have demaunded her counsaile. That which may be done is, that I will thorow this window give unto you great store of money, wherewith you may redeeme your selfe, and your friends: and let one of you goe into the Christians countrey, and buy a Barke, and after returne for his fellowes, and he shall finde me in my fathers garden, which is at the gate of Babazon, neere to the Sea coast, where I meane to stay all this Sommer, with my father and my servants: from whence you may take mee out boldly by night, and carry me to the Barke. And see well that thou wilt be my husband; for if thou wilt not, I will demaund of Marien to chastise thee: and if thou darest trust no body to goe for the vessell, redeeme thy selfe and goe, for I know thou wilt rather returne then another, seeing thou art a Gentleman and a Christian; learne out the garden: and when I see thee walke there where thou now art, I will make account that the Bath is emptie, and will give thee great store of money. Alà preserve thee, my deere friend.'

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

These were the contents of the second Letter, which being heard by us all, every one offered to bee himselfe the ransomed person, and promised to goe and returne with all punctuality, and I also made a proffer of my selfe: to all which resolutions the Renegate opposed himselfe, saying that he would consent in no wise that any one of us should be freed, untill we were all together delivered: for experience had taught him how evill ransomed men were wont to keepe those promises which they passed in the times of their thraldome: for many times certaine principall captives had made that kinde of triall, redeeming of some one or other that should goe to Valentia or Mallorca, with money to freight a Barke or Fregat, and returne for him that had ransomed them, and did never returne again: for the recovered liberty, and the feare of adventuring to lose it

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

againe, concurring, did blot out of their memory all the other obligations of the world. And to confirme the truth which he averred, he briefly recounted unto us an accident which befel much about the same time to certaine Christian Gentlemen, the strangest, as I suppose, that ever hapned in those quarters, wherein do succeede every other day events full of wonder and admiration, and therfore concluded, that what ought and might be done, was, that they should give unto him to buy a Barke, such money as they meant to employ in the ransome of a captive, and he would buy it there in Argiers, under pretext of becomming a merchant and sayler in Tetuan and that cost: and being once owner of a Barke, he would easily devise how to have them out of the Baths and imbarke them al: how much more, if the Moorish Ladie did, as she promised, give them money enough to ransom them all, was it a most easie thing they being free, to embark themselves at midday: but the greatest difficultie in this affaire was, that the Moores use not to permit any Renegate to buy any Barke or other small vessell, but onely great vessels of warre: for they suspect that he that buyes a Barke, especially if he be a Spaniard, does it for no other end but to runne away to Christian Countries. And yet hee knew how to facilitate that inconvenience, by inducing a Tangerine Moore to become his partner of the Barke, the gaines that should be gotten by the commodities thereof, and with this shaddow hee would become Lord of it himselfe, and therewithall accounted the matter ended. And although that both my selfe and my Camaradas held it the better course to send unto Mallorca for one, as the Moorish Lady said, yet durst we not contradict him, fearefull that if we did not what he would have us to doe, he would discover us, and indanger our lives, if he did once detect Zoraidas practices, for the safeguard of whose life wee would all of us most willingly adventure our owne: and therfore we determined to put our selves into Gods and the Renegates hands. And so we answered at the same instant to Zorayda, telling her that we would accomplish all that she had admonished us, because she had advertised us as wel as if Lela Marien had told her what she

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

should say, and that the dilating or shortning of the affaire did consist only in her selfe. I did offer my selfe anew to become her husband: and with this the day ensuing, wherein the Bath was also free, she sent me downe at divers times by the Cane two thousand Duckats, and a Letter, wherein she said that she would goe to her fathers garden the next Iumia, that is, the Friday following, and that before she went away, she would give us more money. And that, if it were not enough we should advise her, and she would give unto us as much as we would demaund; for her father had so much treasure, as he would never perceive it, how much more seeing she had, and kept the Keyes of all. We gave five hundred crownes presently to the Renegate to buy a Barke, and with eight hundred I redeemed my selfe, giving the money to a Valentian Merchant, which was at that season in Argiers, who did ransome me of the King, taking me forth on his word, which he passed to pay my ransome, at the arrivall of the first Ship that should come from Valentia. For if hee had delivered the money instantly, it would have given occasion to the King to suspect that my ransome was many dayes before in Argiers, and that the Merchant had kept it silently, to make his benefite thereof. Finally, my Master was so cavilous as I durst not in any wise pay him presently.

The Thursday before the Friday of the beautifull Zoraidas departure towards the garden, she gave unto us other two thousand duckats, and did likewise advise us of her going away, intreating me that as soone as I had ransomed my selfe, I should learne the way to the garden, and take occasion howsoever to goe to it, and see her. I answered her briefly, that I would doe so, and prayed her that she would carefully commend our proceedings to Lela Marien, with those prayers which the captive had taught her. This being done, order was also given for the ransoming of my three companions, to facilitate our issue out of the Bathes, and also that they seeing me free, and themselves undelivered, might not be troubled or perswaded by the Divell, to doe any thing in prejudice of Zorayda. For although that they, being the men of that quality they were, might

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein is
prosecuted
the Historie
of the
Captive.

assure me from this feare, I would not, for all that, ad-
venture the matter, and therefore I caused them to be
ransomed by the same meanes that I was redeemed my
selfe, giving all the money to the Merchant, that he
might with the more security passe his word for us : to
whom yet we never did discover our practise and
secret, by reason of the eminent danger
of the discovery thereof.

CHAPTER X III I

Wherein the captive prosecuteth the pleasant
narration of his life.



IFTEENE dayes were not fully expired, when the Renegate had bought him a very good Barke, able to holde thirty persons or more ; and for the better colour and assurance of his businesse, he made a voyage to a place called Sargel, which is thirty leagues distant from Argiers towards the side of Oran, and is a great place of traffique for drie Figges. He made this voyage twice or thrice in company with the Tagarine, of whom we made mention : and the name of Tagarino is in Barbary given to the Moors of Arragon, Granada, and Mudejares. And in the Kingdome of Fez those Mudejares are called Elches, and are the Nation which that King doth most employ in warlike affaires. You shall therefore understand, that every time he passed by with his Barke, he did cast Ancre in a little cricke, twise the shot of a Crosbow from the Garden wherein Zorayda attended ; and there the Renegate would in very good earnest exercise himselfe with the Moores that rowed, eyther to flie or else to assault one another in jest, as he meant to doe after in good earnest : and would now and then goe to Zoraydas Garden, and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

demaund fruits, which her father would bestow upon him, without knowing what hee was: and although hee desired to have spoken with Zorayda, as hee told mee afterward himselfe, and have informed her, how it was hee that was to carry her away by my direction into the land of Christians, and that shee should therefore live chearfull and secure, yet was it never possible, forasmuch as the women of that nation do not suffer themselves to be viewed by any Moore or Turke if he be not their husband, or that their parents command them, yet do they haunt and communicate themselves to Christian captives freely, and that sometimes more then is convenient, and truly, it would have grieved me, that he should have spoken unto her, for perhaps it would have perplexed her extraordinarily, to see her affaire committed to the trust of a runnegate: but God who did otherwise dispose it, did not concurre with this good desire of our renegate: who seeing how safely he went and returned from Sargel, and that he sounded when and where he pleased; and that the Tagarino his partner, did only what he liked, and that I was ransomed, and nothing else wanting, but to finde out some Christians that would row, hee bad mee bethinke my selfe, what men I would bring away with mee besides those that I had ransomed, and that I should warne them to be ready against the next Friday, wherein hee was resolved that wee should depart.

Seeing this, I spake to twelve Spaniards very lusty rowers, and those that could with most liberty get out of the Citty: and it was not a little matter to finde so many there at that time, for there were twenty gallies abroade a robbing, which had carried all the other rowers with them, and these were left behinde, because their Master did keepe at home that Summer to finish a Galley that was on the Stockes a making. To these I said nothing else, but only warned them that the Friday ensuing in the evening, they should closely steale out by one and one, and goe towards Aguimorates Garden, and there expect me untill I came unto them. I gave this advice to every one of them a part, with order also, that although they saw any other

CHAPTER
XIIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

Christians there, they should tell them nothing else, but that I had commaunded them to expect me in that place. This diligence being used, yet wanted there another, which was the most expedient of all, to wit, to advise Zoraida of the termes wherein our affaires did stand, to the end shee might be likewise ready and prepared, and not affrighted, though wee did assault her before the time that shee could imagine the barke of the Christians to be come to fetch her away ; and therefore I resolved to goe my selfe unto the Garden and see whether I might speake with her : and taking the occasion to goe and gather some hearbs, I went unto it the day before our departure, and the first person with whom I encountred, was her father, who demanded of me in a language, which in all Barbarie and Constantinople is usually spoken by the Moores to their captives, and is neither Arabian, Spanish, nor of any other nation, but rather a mixture of all languages, wherewith all of us understand one another : he, I say, in that kinde of speech demanded of me, what I sought for in that his garden, and to whom I did belong ? I answered, that I was one Arnaute Mami his slave (and this, because I was very certainly informed that he was his intire friend) and that I came thither to gather of all sorts of hearbs to make a sallade : he consequently asked of me whether I was a man of ransome or no, and how much my Master demaunded for me ? and being in those questions and demaunds, the beautifull Zoraida descended from the house into the garden, who had espyed me a good while before : and as the Moorish women doe not greatly estrange themselves from the sight of Christians, nor are in their behaviour or conversation with them any thing squeamish, as we have said already, shee did not greatly feare to approch the place where her father talked with mee : but rather, her father perceiving that shee came on somewhat slowly, did call, and commanded her to draw neare.

It were a thing impossible for mee to recount the great beauty and gallant disposition, or the bravery and riches of attyre, wherein my beloved Zoraida then shewed her selfe to mine eyes. I will only say this, that there hanged more Pearles at her eares, superlative faire necke, and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

haire, then shee hath haire on her head, about the wrests of her legges, which were naked after the manner of her Countrey, shee wore two *Carcaxes* (for so the manicles or bracelets of the feete are called in the Morisco tongue) of the finest gold, wherein were inchaced so many Diamonds, that as shee told me after, her father valued them at twenty thousand crowns ; and those about the wrests of her hands, were of equall esteeme. Her pearles were many, and those most Orient ; for all the chiefe bravery and ornament of the Moorish Ladies consists in the adorning of themselves with Pearles and Pearle seede ; by reason whereof there is more Pearles and Pearle seede to be found among the Moores, then among all the other nations of the world : and Zoraidas father had the fame to have many, and those the very best that were in Argiers ; and also above two hundred thousand Duckats of Spanish gold : of all which was shee the Lady, who now is mine. And if with all this ornament shee could then seeme faire, by the reliques that have remained unto her among so many labors, may be easily ghesseg, what shee would have beeene in the time of prosperity ; for all of us doe know, that the beauty of some women hath limited dayes and seasons, and requireth certayne accidents either to diminish or increase it, and it is a thing naturall to the passions of the minde, either to raise, or abase it, but most commonly they wholly destroy it. To be briefe, I say, that shee arrived to the place where we discoursed at that time most richly attyred, and beautifull beyond measure, or I at last deemed her the fairest that I had ever beheld untill then : and herewithall remembiring the obligation wherein shee had tyed mee, thought that some Deitie had presented it selfe to my view, being come from heaven to the earth, for my recreation and relieve.

As soone as shee was arrived her father told her in her owne language, how I was his friend Arnaute Mami his captive, and that I came there to gather a sallade : then shee taking the speech, demaunded in that medly of tongues of which I have spoken, whether I was a Gentleman, and what the reason was why I redeemed not my selfe ? I made awnswere, that I was already ransomed, and by the ransome

CHAPTER
XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

might be conjectured, in how much my Master valued me, seeing hee had for my liberty a thousand and five hundred Coltanis; to this shee answered; In good sooth, if thou werst my fathers, I would cause him not to give thee for twice as much more: for you Christians are great lyars, and doe make every one of your selves poore men, to defraude the Moores of their due ransome. It may well bee so, Madame, quoth I: but I have for my part used all truth in this affaire with my Master, and doe, and will use truth with as many persons as I shall ever have occasion to treate with in this world; and when dost thou goe away? quoth Zoraida: to morrow, as I beleeve, quoth I. For there is a French vessell here, which sets forth to morrow, and I meane to depart in her: were it not better, replied Zoraida, to expect untill vessels come out of Spaine, and goe away with them, then with those of France, which are not your friends? no, quoth I, although if it were true as the newes runne, that there comes a vessell from Spaine, I would attend it; but yet it is more certaine that I shall depart to morrow: for the desire I have to see my selfe at home in my Countrey, and with those persons whom I love, is so great, as it will not permit me to expect any other commodity, that foreslowes it selfe, bee it never so good. Thou art doubtlesly marryed in thy Countrey, said Zoraida, and therefore desirest to goe see thy wife? I am not married, quoth I, but I have passed my word to marry, as soone as I am there safely arrived. And is shee beautiful to whome thou hast past it? quoth Zoraida. So beautifull, said I, as to indeere it and tell you the truth, shee is very like unto your selfe. Hereat her father laughed very hartily, and said. In good earnest Christian, shee must be very fair that may compare with my daughter, who is the most beautifull of all this Kingdome: and if thou wilt not beleieve me, looke on her well, and thou shalt see that I tell thee but the truth. He himselfe, as most perfect in the tongue, did serve for the interpreter of most of our speeches; for although shee could speake that illegitimate language which is there in use, yet did shee manifest her mind more by signes then by wordes.

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Whilst thus wee reasoned of many matters, there came running towards us a certaine Moore, and told his Master how foure Turkes had leaped over the Garden walles, and were gathering the fruits, although they were not yet ripe. The old man and his daughter Zoraida started hereat; for it is an universall and naturall defect in the Moores to feare the Turkes, but specially the Soulđiers of that nation, who are commonly so insolent, and have such command over the Moores that are their subjects, as they doe use them worse then if they were their slaves. Therefore Zoraidas father said unto her; daughter, retire thy selfe into the house, and keepe thy selfe in whilst I goe speake to those dogges; and thou, Christian, goe and seeke out thine hearbs, and depart in good houre, and I pray Alà to conduct thee safely to thy Country. I inclined my selfe to him, and he departed to search out the Turkes, leaving me alone with Zoraida, who began to make adoe as if she went whither her father had commanded her; but scarce was hee covered among the trees of the Garden, when she returned to mee, with her eyes full of teares, said, *Ameri Christiano, Amexi*, that is, goest thou away, Christian, goest thou away? I answered, yes Ladie, that I doe, but I will never depart away without thee: expect mee the next Friday, and be not affrighted when thou shalt see us, for we will goe to the Christian Country then, without all doubt. This I said to her in such sort as she understood all my words very well, and casting her arme over my necke, shee began to travell with languishing steps towards the house, and fortune would (which might have beene very ill, if heaven had not rectified it) that as we walked together in that manner and forme, her father, who did by this returne after hee had caused the Turkes to depart, espyed us, and we saw also very well how he had perceived us: wherefore Zoraida, who is very descreet, would not take away her arme from my necke, but rather drew nearer unto me, and laid her head on my brest, and bowed her knees a little, with evident token that she swouned, and I likewise made as though I did sustaine her up by force. Her father came running over towards us, and seeing his daughter in that state, demanded the cause

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

of her: but seeing shee made no awnswere, hee himselfe said, she doubtlesly is dismaide by the suddaine affright she tooke at the entrance of those Dogges: and taking her away from me, he bowed her to his owne brest: and shee breathing out a sigh, with her eyes yet full of teares, said againe, *Amezi Christiano, Amezi, goe away, Christian, goe away:* to which her Father replied, there is no cause daughter why the Christian should goe away, for he hath done thee no harme, and the Turkes are already departed. Sir they have affrighted her (quoth I) as you have said, but yet since she hath commanded mee to goe away, I will not offend her; therefore rest in peace, for I will returne, if it please you to give mee leave, for hearbs to this garden, when it is needfull; for my Master saies there are none better to be found for sallads in any other garden, then you have here in this: come as oft as thou wilt, said Aguimorato, for my daughter saies not this, in respect that thou or any other Christian hath offended her, but that, meaning to say, that the Turkes should goe away, she bad thee to depart, or else shee spake it, because it is time for thee to gather thine hearbs.

With this I tooke leave of both: and she seemed at the instant of my departure to have had her heart torne away from her, as she departed with her father; and I under colour of seeking herbs, went about all the garden at my leisure, and viewed all the sallies, and the entrances thereof, the strength of the house, and the commodities that might bee offered to facilitate our enterprise. This being done, I came home and made a relation to the renegate, and my other fellowes, of all that had passed: and did long infinitely to see the hower wherein I might, without any affright or danger, possesse that happinesse which fortune in the faire and lovely Zoraida, offered unto mee. In fine, the time passed over, and the so much desired day and terme arrived: and every one of us following the order, which with mature consideration and long discourse we had agreed on, we found the good successe we desired. For the very Friday following the day wherein I had spoken with Zoraida in the Garden, Morrenago (for so was the renegate called) neere

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

night cast anchor almost right before the place wherein the beautifull Zoraida remayned. The Christians also that were to row, were readie, and hidden in sundry places there abouts. All were suspended, and resolutely expected my comming, desirous to set upon the Barke that was before their face: for they knew not of the agreement that was betweene mee and the renegate; but rather made full account that they were to gaine their liberty by force of armes, and killing the Moores that came in that vessell.

It therefore befell, that as soone as I and my fellowes appeared, all the rest that were hidden, and espied us, made forthwith over towards us. This was at an hower when the Citie gates were shut, and never a bodie abroad among all those fields: and when wee were all together, wee were in doubt whether it would be best, first to goe and fetch Zoraida, or to imprison and stome the Tagarine Moores, that rowed in the frigat. And being in this doubt, the renegate came to us, asking upon what we stayed, for it was now high time to bee going away, and all his Moores were wretchlesse, and the greater number of them a sleepe: We told him then the cause of our stay, and he answered that it was of most importance, first to subiect the vessell which might be done with very great facilite, and without any perill, and that we might goe after for Zoraida. His opinion liked us all verie well, and therefore without lingring any longer, he leading the way, we came to the vessell, and he himselfe leaping in first of all, set hand to his faulchion and said in Morisco, let none of you that is heere stirre himselfe, if he love his life. And saying so all the rest of the Christians entred: the Moores which were of little spirit, hearing their master say so, were marvellously amazed, and without daring, any one of them to set hand to their armes, which were but a few at all, they suffered themselves very quietly to be taken and bound by the Christians, which did it very dexteriously, threatning them, that if they did let slip the least outcry, they should presently be all put to the sword: this being finished, and the halfe of our people remaining in their guard, wee that were left, conducted also by the renegate, went towards Agui-

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

moratos Garden : the doore thereof did, by very good hap, open with as little noyse, as if it had had no lock at all : Whereupon we went with great quietnesse and silence towards the house unseene or espied of any.

The beautifull Zoraida was the while expecting us at a window, and as soone as shee felt people approach, demanded with a low voice whether wee were Nizarans, as if she would say or aske, whether we were Christians ? I answered that we were, and willed her to come downe. As soone as shee knew mee, she stayed not a minute, but without answering any word, came downe in an instant ; and opening the doore, shewed her selfe to us all, more beautifull, and richly attired, then I am able in any sort to expresse. As soone as I saw her, I tooke her by the hand, and kissed it, the same did the renegate, and my two Camaradas ; and all the rest which knew not the matter, did as they had seene us doe before them ; for it seemed that wee did no more but give her thankes, and acknowledge her the auctresse of all our liberties. The Renegat demaunded of her in her owne language, whether her father were in the Garden or no ? she answered that he was, and that he slept ; Then wil it be requisite quoth the renegat, to rouse him, and beare him, and al the other things of worth in this garden away with us : that shall not be so, (quoth she) for I wil have no man to touch my father, and in this house there is nothing of value, but that which I meane to carry away with my selfe, which is so much as will be sufficient to cheere and inrich you all : as if you will stay but a while, you shall perceive. And saying so, she entred againe into the house, promising to returne to us speedily, and bade us stand still, without making any noise. I demanded of the renegate what speech had passed betweene them, and he told me all she had said, and I answered him againe, that I would not have Zoraidas will transgrest in any sort : by this time she returned loden with a little Casket full of gold, so that she was scarce able to beare it. And her father in the meane season, by bad fortune awaked, and heard the noise that was beneath in his garden, and looking out at a window, he perceived that they were all

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Christians that were in it, and therefore cried out in a loud
and unmeasurable maner in the Arabian tongue, Christians,
Christians, Theeves, Theeves ; by which cries we were
all of us stricken into very great feare and confusion : but
the renegate seeing the peril wherein we were, and how
neerely it concerned him to come off from that enterprize,
before he were discovered, ranne up very speedily to the
place where Aguimorato stood, and some of our fellowes
accompanied him (for I durst not abandon Zoraida, who
had falne betweene mine armes all amazed) and in con-
clusion, those which had mounted behaved themselves so
well, as they brought Aguimorato downe in a trice, having
tied his hand, and set a gagge in his mouth, which hindred
his speech, threatning him that if hee did speake but a word,
it should cost him his life.

When his daughter saw him, she covered her eyes, be-
cause she would not behold him, and he marvelled, wholy
ignoring with how good a will she came away with us :
but then considering that nothing was so requisite as our
legges, we did with al velocity and diligence get into the
frigat, for our companions did perplexedly expect our
returne, halfe afraid that some disgrace had befalne us. Scarce
were two houres of the night overrunne, when we were all
imbarked : and then we unmanacled Zoraidas fathers hands,
and tooke the cloath out of his mouth. But the renegate
did againe admonish him, that as he tendred his life he
should not speake one word ; he beholding his daughter
likewise there, began to sigh very feelingly, but chiefly per-
ceiving me to hold her so straightly embraced, and that she
made no resistance, nor did complaine or seeme coy, but
stood quiet. But yet for all that he kept silence, fearing
lest they should put the renegates menaces in execusion.
Zoraida seeing her selfe now safe within the Barke, and that
we were readie to row away, looking on her father, and the
other Moores that were tied therein, she intreated the
renegate to tell me how she desired me to doe her the
favour to set those Moores and her father at libertie : for
she would rather cast her selfe into the Sea, then see a
father, who had loved her so dearly, carried away captive

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

before her eyes, and that also by her occasion. The renegate told me her minde, and I answered how I was very well pleased it should be so: but he replied, that it was in no sort expedient, by reason that if they were landed there, they would presently raise the countrey, and put the whole Citié in a tumult, and cause certaine light Frigats to bee manned, and sent out in our pursuite; and lay both Sea and land for us in such sort, as it would be impossible for us to escape: but that as might bee done was to give them liberty at the first Christian countrey wherat wee arrived: All of us agreed to this opinion, and Zoraida also (to whom reason was given of the motives we had not to free them forthwith and accomplish her will therein) remained satisfied: and therefore presently with joyfull silence, and cheerefull diligence every one of our lustie rowers, ceasing upon his oare, we beganne after we had commended our selves unto Almighty God, to lanch forth, and addresse our course towards the Iles of Mallorca, which is the neerest Christian country: but by reason that the wind blew somewhat from the mountaines, and that the Sea began to be rough, it was not possible to continue that course; and so wee were forced to approach the shore, and go by little and little towards Oran, not without great griefe and anguish, for feare to be espied by the towne of Sargell, which is on that cost, and falls some seventie leagues beyond Argiers: and we did likewise feare to meeet in that passage some galleat of those which come ordinarily with merchandize from Tetuan, although everie one of us for himselfe, and for all together, did presume, that if we encountred a galliot of merchandize, so it were not a Pirate, that not only we wold not be lost, but rather would take the vessell that therein we might with more security finish our voyage. Zoraida whilst thus we sailed, went with her head between my hands, because she would not looke on her father, and I felt her, how she was still invoking of Lela Marien to assist us, and having sailed about some thirty leagues, the morning overtooke us about some three Musket shot from land, in a place that seemed to be desart, and free from all accesse of those that might

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

discover us ; and yet for all that, we got by might and mayne, somewhat further into the Seas, that now were become a little calmer, and having entred some two leagues into the maine, order was given, that they should row by turnes, whilst they did refresh themselves and take a little sustenance, for the Barke was very well furnished with victuals, although those which did row, refused the offer, saying, that then it was no time to repose, and that they should set those that did not row, to dinner, for they would not yet in any sort let go their Oares. It being done as they had said, the winde did rise so much, as it made us abandoning our Oares, to set saile and direct our Boat towards Oran, being unable to take any other course : all was done with very great speed, and so we made by the saile more then eight miles an hower, free from all other feare, then that of encountering some vessell of warre. We gave the Moores our prisoners their dinner, and the renegate comforted them, saying, that they went not as prisoners, for they should receive their liberty, upon the first commodity that were proferd. The same was likewise said to Zoraidas father, who returned them this answere. I would easily expect and beleeve any other thing O Christians of your liberality and honorable manner of proceeding, but doe not thinke that I am so simple as once to imagine that you will give me my liberty, for you did never expose your selfe to the danger of dispoiling me thereof, with intention to returne it me so prodigally againe, especially knowing as you doe, who I am, and the profit which you may reap by giving me it againe, to which profit if you wil put a name, and tel me how much would you demand, I doe even from hence offer unto you all that which you will seeke for me, and for that unfortunate daughter of mine, or if you wil not deliver me, I will give you it for her alone, who is the greatest, and the best part of my soule. And saying so, he began to weepe so bitterly, as he moved us all to compassion, and forced Zoraida to looke upon him ; who seeing him weepe, was so strangely moved, as arising from my feet, she went and embraced her father, and laying her face upon his, they began together so tender a lamentation, as

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

many of us that were in the Barke, were forced to keep them company: but when her father noted her to be so richly adorned, and with so many Jewels on, he asked her in his owne language; how haps this daughter that yester-night late before this terrible disaster befel us, wherin we are plunged, I saw thee attired in thine ordinary houshold array, and that now, without having had any leasure to apparel thy selfe, or having given thee any glad tidings, for whose solemnizing, thou oughtest to adorne and publish thy selfe, I do view thee thus clad in the richest attire which I could bestow upon thee, when our fortune was most favorable. Answer me to this, for thou hast suspended and astonished mee more then the very disgrace it selfe wherein I am.

All that the Moore said to his daughter the Renegate declared unto us and she did not answeare a word to him: but when he saw the little coffers lie at one side of the Barke, wherein she was wont to keepe her Jewels, and that hee knew very well she had left at Argiers, and not brought to the garden, he was much more amazed, and demaunded of her, how that coffer was come into our possession, and what things she had therewith in it? to which the renegate, without attending that Zoraida should answeare him, said, Sir, doe not trouble your selfe by demaunding so many things of your daughter Zoraida, for with one that I will say, I shal satisfie them all: and therefore you shall understand that shee is a Christian, and hath beene the file that cut off our chaines, and is the libertie it selfe of our captivitie; and she goeth along with us of her owne free will, as content (if mine imagination doth not wrong me) to see her selfe in this state, as he is that commeth out of darkenesse to the light, from death unto life, and out of paine into glory. Is it true daughter, which this man sayes? quoth the Moore. It is, answered Zorayda: that thou in effect art a Christian, replied the old man, and she that hath put her father into his enemies hands? To which Zorayda answered, I am she that is a Christian, but not she that hath brought thee to this passe: for my desire did never so estrange it selfe from thee, as to abandon or harme thee, but only endevoured to

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

doe my selfe good. And what good hast thou done thy self daughter? Demand that, said she, of Lela Marien, for she can therin informe thee better then I can.

Scarce had the Moore heard her say so, when with incredible haste he threw himselfe headlong into the Sea, wherein hee had beene questionlesly drowned, if the long apparell he wore on, had not kept him up a while above the water. Zoraida cried out to us to save him: and so we all presently ranne, and laying hold on a part of his Turkish robe, drew him up halfe drowned, and wholly devoyde of feeling. Whereat Zorayda was so grieved, that she lamented him as dolefully as if he had beeene dead. There we laid him with his mouth downward, and he avoyded a great quantity of water, and after the space of two houres returned to himselfe againe: and in the meane time the winde also turning, it did drive us towards the coast; so that we were constrainyd to keepe our selves by very force of armes from striking upon it, and our good fortune directing us, we arrived to a little Creeke at the side of a certayne Cape or Promontory, called by the Moores, the Cape of the Cava Rumia, which in our Language signifies, ‘the ill Christian woman’: and the Moores hold it for a tradition, that in the very same place was the Cava buried, for whom Spaine was lost, and conquered by the Moores: for *Cava* in their language signifies ‘an ill woman,’ and *Rumia* a ‘Christian’: yea, and they holde it for a signe of misfortune, to arrive or cast Ancre there, when meere necessity drives them thither: without which they never approach it, yet did it not prove to us the shelter of an ill woman, but the secure haven of our safety. We sent our Centinels a shore, and never let the Oares slip out of our hands: We did likewise eate of the Renegates provision, and heartily besought Almighty God and our Ladie to assist and favour us with a happy end, to so luckie a beginning. And we agreed upon Zoraydas intreatie, to set her father and the other Moores that we had tyed, a land in that place: for she was of so tender and compassionate a minde, as she could in no wise brooke to see her father tied in her presence, or her countreymen borne away captives: wherfore we made her a promise,

CHAPTER
XIIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

that we wold at our departure let them go al away, seeing we incurd no danger by leaving them in that inhabitable desart: our prayers were not so vain, but that they found gentle acceptance in heaven, which presently changed the Winde, and appeased the Sea, inviting us cheerfully to returne to it againe, and prosecute our commenced voyage.

Seeing that the weather was favourable, we loosed the Moors, and set them al a land one by one; and comming to disembark Zoraydas Father, who was by that time wholly come to himselfe, he said, For what doe you conjecture, Christians, that this bad woman is glad that you give me libertie? Do you thinke that she doth it for pitie that she takes of me? No truely, but she doth it only to remove the hinderance my presence gave her when she would execute her unlawful desires. Nor ought you to beleeve that shee is mooved to change religion, by reason that she understands yours to be better then her owne, but onely because she knowes licentiousnesse to be more publickely and freely practised in your countrey then among us: and then turning to Zorayda, whom I and another Christian held fast by both the armes lest she should do some desperate act, he said, O infamous girle, and ill-advised mayden, where dost thou runne thus blinded and distracted, in the power of those dogges our naturall enemies? Cursed be the houre wherein I engendred thee, and cursed the delights and pleasures wherin thou wast nousled. I perceiving that he was not like to make an end of his execrations so soone as I could wish, had him set on shore, and thence he prosecuted his maledictions and plaints, praying unto Mahomet that he would intercede with Alà, that we might be all destroyed, confounded, and cast away. And when we could heare his words no longer, by reason that we set saile, we perceived his workes, that were, to plucke his beard, teare his haire, and cast himselfe on the ground: but once he did lift up his voyce so high, as that we heard him say, return, beloved daughter, returne to the land, for I doe pardon thee all that thou hast done, and deliver that money to those men, for it is now their owne, and returne thou to comfort thy sadde and desolate father, who

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

will forsake his life on these desolate sands, if thou dost abandon him.

CHAPTER
XIIII

Zorayda heard him say all this, and lamented thereat, but knew not how to speake, or answe him any other thing but this, Father mine, I pray Alà, that Lela Marien, who hath beene the cause of my becomming a Christian, may likewise comfort thee in thy sorrow. Alà knowes well that

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

I could do none other then I did, and that these Christians do owe me nothing for my good wil, seeing that though I had not come away with them, but remained at my house, yet had it beene impossible (such was the hast wherewithall my soule pressed me) not to have executed this my purpose ; which seemes to me to be as good, as thou O beloved father, dost account it wicked. She said this in a time that neither her father could heare her, nor we beholde him : and therefore, after I had comforted Zorayda, we did thenceforth onely attend our voyage, which was so much holpen by the favorable winde, as we made full account to bee the next day on the cost of Spaine : but, as good very seldome or rather never, betides a man thoroughly and wholly, without being accompanied or followed by some evill which troubles and assaults it, our fortune woudl, or rather the maledictions of the Moore, powred on his Daughter : (for the curses of any father whatsover are to bee feared) that being ingulfed three houres within night, and going before the winde with a full sayle, and our Oares set up, because the prosperous winde had rid us of the labour of rowing : we saw neere unto us, by the light of the Moone that shined very cleerely, a round vessell which with all her sailes spread, did crosse before us in the Sea, and that so neerely as wee were faine to strike downe her Saile, that we might avoid the shog she was like to give us; and those that were in her had on the other side laboured also what they might, to turne her out of our way, standing all of them on the hatches to demaund of us what we were, from whence we came, and whither we did saile ? But by reason that they spake French, the Renegate bade us not to speake a word, saying, Let none answer, for these are French Pirates which make their bootie of every body. For this cause none of

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

us answered: and being passed a litle forward, and that the Ship remained in the Lee of us, they suddenly shott off two pieces of Artillery, and as I thinke both of them had chaine bullets, for with the one they cut our Mast asunder, and overthrew it and the saile into the sea, and instantly after they discharged another, and the bullet alighting in our barke, did pierce it thorow and thorow, without doing any other hurt, but we, seeing that our vessell beganne to sinke, beganne all to crie out, and request them to succour us, and prayed them that they would take us into their vessel, for we were a drowning. Then they came amaine, and casting out their Cocke-boate, there entred into it as good as a douzen Frenchmen, wel appointed with their Harcabuzes and Matches lighted, and so approched unto us; and perceiving how few we were, and that the Barke did sinke, they received us into their boate, saying, that because we had used the discourcesie of not making them answer, that misfortune had befalne us. Our Renegate about this time tooke the coffer wherein Zoraydas treasures were kept, and threw it into the sea unperceived of any.

In conclusion, we went all of us into the great vessel with the Frenchmen, who after they had informed themselves of all that which they desired to know, as if they were our capitall enemies, they afterward dispoyled us of all that ever we had about us, and of Zorayda they tooke all, even unto her very bracelets, that she wore on the wrests of her feete. But the wrong they did to Zorayda did not afflict me so much as the feare I conceived, that after they had taken away from her, her most rich and pretious jewels, they would also deprive her of the jewell of most prize, and which shee valued most. But the desires of that nation extend themselves no farther, then to the gaine of money: and their avarice in this is never throughly satisfied; and at that time was so great, as they would have taken from us the very habites of slaves, that we brought from Barbarie, if they had found them to have beene worth any thing: and some there were of opinion among them, that we should be al inwreathed in a saile, and throwen into the Sea, because they had intention to traffique into some havens of

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Spaine, under the name of Britaines, and that if they caried us alive, they should be punished, their robbery being detected: but the Captaine, who was he that had pilled my beloved Zorayda, said, that he was so contented with his booty, as he meaneed not to touch any part of Spaine, but would passe the streights of Gibraltar by night, or as he might, and so returne againe to Rochel, from whence he was come: and there upon they all agreed to give us their Cock-boate, and all that was necessary for our short voyage, as indeed they performed the day ensuing when we were in the view of Spaine, with the sight whereof all our grieves and poverties were as quite forgotten, as if we never had felt any; so great is the delight a man takes to recover his liberty. It was about midday when they put us into the Cocke, giving unto us two Barrels of water and some Bisket; and the Captaine moved with some compassion, as the beautifull Zorayda embarqued her selfe, bestowed on her about fortie crownes in gold; nor would he permit his Souldiers to dispoyle her of these very garments, which then and now she weares.

We entred into the cockboate, and giving them thankes for the good they did, and shewing at our departure more tokens of thankfulnes, then of discontent, they sayled presently away from us towards the straights, and we without looking on any other north or starre, then the land it selfe which appeared before us, did row towards it so lustily, that at the Sunneset we were so neere, as we made full account to arrive before the night were farre spent. But by reason that the Moone did not shine, and the night was very darke, and that wee knew not where wee were, wee did not hold it the best course to approch the shore too neare; yet others there were that thought it convenient and good, desiring that wee should make to it, although we ran the boate on the rocks, and farre from any dwelling; for by doing so, we should free our selves from the feare which we ought of reason to have, lest there should bee up and down on that coast any Frigats of the Pyrates of Tetuan, which are wont to leave Barbarie over night, and be on the coast of Spaine ere morning, and ordinarily make their booty, and

CHAPTER
XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

turne to their supper againe to Barbarie the night following: but of the contrary opinions, that which was followed was, that wee should draw neare the land by little and little, and that if the quietnesse of the Sea would permit it, wee should take land where wee might best and most commodiously doe it. This was done, and a little before midnight we arrived to the foot of a high and monstrous mountaine, which was not altogether so neare to the Sea, but that it did grant a litle patch of ground, whereon we might commodiously disembarke. Wherefore we ranne our selves on the sands, and came all a land and kissed the earth, and with teares of most joyfull content and delight, gave thankes unto our Lord God, for the incomparable favours which hee had done us in our voyage: then tooke wee out our vittailes from the boate, and drew it selfe up on the shore, and ascended a great part of the mountaine: for although we were in that place, yet durst wee not assure our selves, nor did throughly beleeve that it was a Christian Country whereon we did treade.

The day breaking somewhat slower then I could have wished it; we ascended the mountaine wholly, to see whether we might discover any dwelling, or sheepfoulds from thence; but although wee extended our sight unto every quarter, yet could we neither descry dwelling, person, path, nor high way: yet did we resolve notwithstanding to enter into the land, seeing that wee could not choose but discover ere long some body who might give us notice of the place where we were: and that which afflicted me most of all was, to see Zoraida goe a foote through those rugged places; for although I did sometimes carry her on my shoulders, yet did the toile I tooke more weary her, then the repose she got could ease her; and therefore would never after the first time suffer me to take that paines againe, and so shee went ever after a foot with great patience, and tokens of joy, I holding her still by the hand; and having travailed litle lesse then a quarter of a league, we heard the noise of a little bell, an infallible argument that neare at hand there was some cattel; whereupon all of us looking very wistly to see whether any body appeared, wee might perceive under a Corke-tree a young

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

sheep-heard, who very quietly and carelesly was carving of a sticke with a knife: we called to him, and he leaped up lightly on foote, and (as we afterwards learned) the first that he got sight of, were the renegate and Zoraida whom he seeing apparelled in the Morisco habit, thought that all the people of Barbarie had beene at his heeles, and therefore running very swiftly into the wood, he cryed all along with marvailous lowdnesse, Moores, Moores are in the land ; Moores, Moores, arme, arme. These outcryes struck us a new into a great perplexity, and scarce did wee know what we should doe : but considering how the sheep-heards alarme would cause all the Country to rise up, and that the horsemen that kept the coast would presently come to see what it was ; we all agreed that the renegate should put off his Turkish attyre, and put on a captives cassocke, which one of the company gave unto him forthwith, although the giver remained after in his shirt : and thus committing the affaire unto almighty God, we followed on by the same way, which we saw the sheep-heard had taken, alwaies expecting when the horsemen of the coast would fall upon us : and we were not deceived in our expectation, for within two houres after, having issued out of those woods into a plaine, we discovered about some fifty horsemen which came running towards us as swiftly as their horses could drive, and having perceived them, we stood still, and stayed untill they came to us, and saw, in stead of the Moores they sought for, so many poore Christians, and remayned somewhat ashamed therat: and one of them demaunded whether wee were the occasion that a sheep-heard had given the alarme: yes, quoth I, and as I was about to informe what I was, and of all our adventure, and from whence we came ; one of the Christians that came with us, did take notice of the horseman who had spoken unto us, and so interrupting my speech, he said. Sirs let God be praised which hath brought us to so good a place as this is, for if I be not deceived, the earth which we tread, is of Velez Malaga ; and if the yeares of my captivitie have not confounded my memory, you likewise Sir that demaunds what we be, are Peter of Bustamante, mine Uncle. As soone as

CHAPTER
XIIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIII

Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

ever the Christian captive had spoken those words, the horsman leaping off his horse ranne and embrased him saying, O nephew, as deare to me as my soule and life, now I doe know thee very well, and many a day since have I wept for thee, thinking thou wast dead, and so hath my sister thy mother, and all the rest of thy friends which doe live yet, and God hath beene pleased to preserve their lives, that they may enjoy the pleasure to behold thee. Wee knew very well, that thou wast in Argiers, and by the signes and tokens of thy clothes, and that of all the rest here of thy companions, I surmize that your escape hath beene miraculous : it was so, replied the Captive, and we shall have time, I hope, to recount unto you the manner.

As soone as the horsemen had understood, that we were Christian Captives, they alighted off their Horses, and every one of them invited us to mount upon his owne, to carry us to the Citty of Velez Malaga, which was yet a league and a halfe from that place : and some of them went to the place where we had left the boate, to bring it to the Citty ; whom wee informed first of the place where it lay ; others did mount us up a horsebacke behind themselves, and Zoraida rode behind the captives Uncle : all the people issued to receive us being premonished of our arrivall by some one that had ridden before. They did not wonder to see Captives freed, nor Moores captived there, being an ordinary thing in those parts, but that whereat they wondred, was the surpassing beauty of Zoraida, which at that season and instant was in her prime, as well through the warmth shee had gotten by her travaile, as also through the joy shee conceived to see her selfe in Christian lands, secure from all feare of being surprised or lost : and these things called out to her face such colours, as if it be not that affection might then have deceived mee, I durst aver, that a more beautifull then she was, the world could not affoord, at least among those which I had ever beheld.

We went directly to the Church to give thanks unto almighty God, for the benefit received : and as soone as Zoraida entred into it, shee said there were faces in it, that resembled very much that of Lela Marien : we told her

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

that they were her images: and the renegate, as well as the brevitiue of the time permitted, instructed her what they signified, to the end shee should doe them reverence, as if every one of them were truly that same Lela Marien, which had spoken unto her. She who hath a very good understanding, and an easie and cleare conceit, comprehended presently all that was told unto her concerning Images: from thence they carried us, and devided us among different houses of the Citty, but the Christian that came with us, carried the renegate, Zoraida and me to the house of his parents, which were indifferently accommodated, and stored with the goods of Fortune, and did entertaine me with as great love and kindnesse, as if I were their own sonne. We remayned sixe dayes in Velez, in which time the renegate having made an information of all that which might concerne him, hee went to the City of Granada to be reconciled, by the holy Inquisitions meanes, to the bosome of our holy Mother the Church. The rest of the freed captives tooke every one the way that he pleased, and Zoraida and I remained behinde, with those Duckats only which the Frenchmans curtesie was pleased to bestow on Zoraida, and with part of that summe I bought her this beast whereon shee rides: I my selfe serving her hitherto as her Father and her Squire, and not as her Spouse, we travale with intention to see whether my father be yet living, or any of my brothers have had more prosperous hap then my selfe, although seeing that Heaven hath made mee Zoraidas consort, me thinks no other good Fortune could arrive, were it never so great, that I would hold in so high estimation. The patience wherewithall shee bears the incommodities usually annext unto poverty, and the desires shee shewes to become a Christian, is such and so great, as it strikes mee into an admiration, and doth move me to serve her all the dayes of my life: although that the delight which I take to see my selfe hers, and shee mine, is oft times interrupted and almost dissolved by the feare which I have, that I shall not finde in mine owne Countrey some little Corner, wherein I may entertayne her; and that time and death have wrought such alteration in the goods and lives of my fathers and brothers, as I shall scarce finde

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER
XIII
Wherein
the captive
prosecuteth
the pleasant
narration of
his life.

any one at home that knowes mee. I have no more, good Sirs, to tell you of my lives Historie, then which whether it be pleasing, and rare, or no, your cleere conceipts are to judge: as for my selfe I dare say, that if it had beene possible, I would have told it with more brevitie; fearing it might bee tedious unto you, I purposely omitted many delightfull circumstances thereof.

CHAPTER XV

Which speakes of that which after befell in the
Inne; and of sundry other things worthy
to be knowne.



HE Captive having said this, held his peace, and Don Fernando replied to him thus. Truly Captaine, the manner wherewithall you have recounted this marvailous successe, hath beene such, as it may be parrangond to the novelty and strangenesse of the event it self, and so great is the delight we have taken in the hearing thereof, as I doe beleeve, that although wee had spent the time from hence till to morrow, in listning to it, yet should we be glad to heare it told over once againe, and saying so, Cardenio, and all the rest did offer themselves and their meanes to his service, as much as lay in them, with so cordiall and friendly words, as the Captive remained throughly satisfied with their good wits: but specially Don Fernando offered, that if hee would returne with him, hee would cause the Marquesse his brother to be Zoraida her Godfather in Baptisme, and that hee for his part, would so accommodate him with all things necessary, as he might enter into the towne, with the decency and authority due to his person. The Captive did gratifie his large offers very courteously,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

but would not accept any of them at that time: by this
the night drew on, and about the fall thereof, there arrived
at the Inne a coatch with some men a horsebacke, and asked
for lodging: to whom the Hostesse answered, that in all the
Inne there was not a spanne free. The number of her guests
was already so many: well, although that be so, quoth
one of the horsemen that had entred, yet must there be a
place found for Master Iustice, who comes in this Coach. At
this name, the Hostesse was affraid, and said, Sir the misfor-
tune is, that I have no beds, but if Master Iustice brings
one with him, as it is probable he doth, let him enter in
boldly, and I and my husband will leave our owne chamber
to accommodate his worship. So be it, quoth the Squire,
and by this time allighted out of the Coach, a man whose
attyre did presently denote his dignity and office; for his
long gowne, and his great and large sleeves did shew that he
was a Judge, as the Servingman affirmed. He led a young
Maiden by the hand, of about some sixteene yeeres old,
apparelled in riding attyre, but she was therewithall of so
disposed, beautifull, and chearefull a countenance, as her
presence did strike them all into admiration: so as if they
had not seene Dorotea, Luscinda, and Zoraida, which were
then in the Inne, they would hardly have beleived that this
Damzels beauty might any where have beene matched.

Don-Quixote was present at the Judges, and the Gentle-
womans entry: and so, as soone as he had seene him, he
said, Sir, you may boldly enter, and take your ease in this
Castle, which although it be but little, and ill accommodated,
yet there is no narrownesse nor discommodity in the world,
but makes place for armes, and learning, and specially if the
armes and letters bring beauty for their guide and leader, as
your learning doth, conducted by this lovely Damzell, to
whom ought not only Castles to open and manifest them-
selves, but also Rocks to part and devide their clifffes, and
Mountaines to bow their ambitious crests, to give and make
her a lodging. Enter therefore, I say, Worshipfull Sir, into
this Paradise, wherein you shall find Starres and Sunnes,
to accompany this skie which you bring in your company.
Here shall you finde armes in their height, and beauty in

CHAPTER

XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

her prime. The Judge marvailed greatly at Don-Quixots speech, whom he began to behold very earnestly, and wondered no lesse at his shape, then at his words, and knowing not what answer he might return him, he was diverted on the other side, by the sudden approch of the three Ladies Luscinda, Dorotea, and Zoraida, which stood before him, for having heard of the arrival of new guests, and also being informed by the Hostesse of the young Ladies beauty, they were come forth to see, and entertaine her. But Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the Curate, did give him more compleate and courtly entertainment then the rusty Knight. In effect the Judge was marvailously amazed at that which hee saw and heard in that Inne : and the faire guests thereof bade the beautiful Maiden welcome. The Judge perceived very well, that the guests of the Inne were all men of account, but Don-Quixotes feature, visage, and behaviour, did set him out of all byas, being not able to conjecture what he might be: and after some courtlike intercourses passed, and the commodities of the Inne examined, they all agreed againe, as they had done before, that all the women should enter into Don-Quixotes roome, and the men remaine without in their guarde. And so the Judge was content that the Damzell, who was his Daughter, should also goe with those Ladies, which shee did with a very good will: and with a part of the Inkeepers narrow bed, and halfe of that which the Judge had brought with him, they made shift to passe over that night the best they could.

The Captive, who from the instant that he had first seen the Judge, did greatly suspect that he was his Brother, and demaunded of one of his servants, how he was called, and where he was borne? The other answered, how he was called the Licenciat Iohn Perez of Viedma, and as hee had heard, hee was borne in a Village of the Mountaines of Leon. With this relation, and the rest that he had noted, he finally confirmed his opinion that it was the brother, who following his fathers advice, had dedicated himselfe to his studies : and full of joy and contentment, calling aside Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the Curate, he certified them of all that passed, and that the Judge was his Brother. The

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Serving-man told him likewise how he went towards the Indies, where he had his place and office in the Courts of Mexico: and also that the young Gentlewoman was his Daughter, of whose birth her mother had died, and he ever after remained a widdower, and very rich, by her dowry and portion that shee had left to her daughter: he demanded of them advice how he might discover himselfe to his brother, or first know, whether after he had detected himselfe, he would receive him with a good countenance and affection, and not be ashamed to acknowledge him for his brother, seeing him in so poore an estate: leave the triall of that experiance to mee, quoth the Curate, and the rather because there is no occasion why you Sir Captaine should not be kindly entertained by him: for the prudence, worths, and good countenance of your brother, give manifest tokens that he is nothing arrogant. For all that, said the Captaine, I would not make my selfe knownen on the suddaine, but would use some pretty ambages to bring him acquainted with me: I say unto you, quoth the Curate, that I will trace the matter in such sort, as we all wil rest satisfied.

Supper was by this made ready, and all of them sate downe to the table, the Captive excepted and Ladies, which supped together within the roome: and about the midst of supper the Curate said, Master Iustice, I have had in times past a Comrade of your very surname in Constantinople, where I was sometime Captive, who was one of the most valiant Souldiers and Captaines that might be found among all the Spanish foote: but he was as unfortunate as he was valorous and resolute. And how was that Captaine called good Sir? quoth the Judge. His name was, replyed Master Curate, Ruy Perez of Viedma, and he was borne in a Village of the mountaines of Leon; and he recounted unto me an occurrence hapned betweene his father, him, and his other brethren, which, if I had not beene told by a man of such credit and reputation as he was, I would have esteemed for one of these fables which old Wives are wont to rehearse by the fire side in winter: for hee said to me, that his father had devided his goods among his three sons, and gave them withall, certaine precepts,

CHAPTER XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

better then those of Cato ; and I know well, that the choise which he made to follow the warre, had such happy successe, as within a few yeares, through his forwardnesse and valour, without the helpe of any other arme, he was advanced to a company of foot, and made a Captain, and was in the way and course of becomming one day a Collonell, but fortune was contrary to him, for even there, where he was most to expect her favour, he lost it, with the losse of his liberty, in that most happy journey wherein so many recovered it, to wit, in the battell of Lepanto. I lost mine in Goleta, and after by different successe wee became companions in Constantinople, from whence we went to Argiers, where did befall him one of the most notable adventures that ever hapned in the world ; and there the Curate with succinct brevity recounted all that had hapned betweene the Captaine and Zoraida : to all which the Judge was so attentive, as in all his life he never listned to any cause so attentively, as then. And the Curate onely arrived to the Point wherein the Frenchmen spoyled the Christians that came in the Barke, and the necessitie wherein his companion and the beautifull Zorayda remained : of whom he had not learned any thing after, nor knew not what became of them or whether they came into Spaine, or were caried away by the Frenchmen to Fraunce.

The Captaine stood listening somewhat a loofe off to all the Curates words, and noted the while the motions and gestures of his brother ; who seeing that the Curate had now made an end of his speech, breathing forth a great sigh, and his eyes being filled with teares, he said, O Sir, if you had known the newes which you have told me : and how neerely they touch me in some points, whereby I am constrained to manifest these teares, which violently breaketh forth in despight of my discretion, and calling, you would hold me excused for this excesse. That Captaine of whom you spoke, is my eldest brother, who, as one stronger, and of more noble thoughts then I or my younger brother, made election of the honourable military calling ; one of the three estates which our father proposed to us, even as your Comrade informed you, when as you thought he related a

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

fable. I followed my booke, by which God and my diligence raised me to the state you see: my younger brother is in Peru, and with that which he hath sent to my father and my self, hath bountifully recompenced the portion he caried, and given to him sufficient to satisfie his liberal disposition, and to mee, wherewithall to continue my studies, with the decensie and authority needfull to advance me to the ranke which now I possesse. My father lives yet, but dying through desire to learne somewhat of his eldest sonne, and doth daily importune God with incessant prayers, that death may not shut his eyes untill hee may once againe see him alive. I only marvell not a little, considering his discretion, that among all his labours, afflictions, or prosperous successes, he hath beene so carelesse in giving his father notice of his proceedings: for if eyther he, or any one of us had knowne of his captivity, he should not have needed to expect the miracle of the Cane for his ransome. But that which troubles me most of all, is, to thinke whether these Frenchmen have restored him againe to libertie, or else slaine him, that they might conceale their robberie the better: all which will be an occasion to mee to prosecute my voyage, not with the joy wherewithall I beganne it, but rather with melancholy and sorrow. O deare brother, I would I might know now where thou art, that I my selfe might goe and search thee out, and free thee from thy paines, although it were with the hazard of mine own. O who is he that could carrie newes to our old father, that thou wert but alive, although thou wert hidden in the most abstruse dungeons of Barbarie; for his riches, my brothers and mine would fetch thee from thence. O beautifull and bountifull Zorayda, who might be able to recompence thee for the good thou has done to my brother! How happy were he that might be present at thy spirituall birth and baptisme, and at thy nuptials, which would be so gratefull to us all! These and many other such wordes did the Judge deliver, so full of compassion for the newes that he had received of his brother, as all that heard him kept him company, in shewing signes of compassion for his sorrow.

The Curate therefore perceiving the happy successe where-

CHAPTER XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XV

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

to his designe and the Captaines desire had sorted, would hold the company sad no longer, and therfore arising from the table, and entring into the roome wherin Zoraida was, he tooke her by the hand, and after her followed Luscinda, Dorotea, and the Judge his daughter. The Captaine stood still to see what the Curate would doe; who taking him fast by the other hand, marched over with them both towards the Judge and the other Gentlemen, and said: Suppresse your teares Master Iustice, and glut your desire with all that good which it may desire, seeing you have here before you your good brother, and your loving sister in law: this man whom you view here, is the Captaine Viedma, and this the beautifull Moore, which hath done so much for him. The Frenchmen which I told you of, have reduced them to the poverty you see, to the end that you may shew the liberality of your noble brest. Then did the Captaine draw neere to embrace his brother, but he held him off a while with his arms, to note whether it was he or no; but when he once knew him, he embraced him so lovingly, and with such abundance of teares, as did attract the like from all the beholders. The wordes that the brothers spoke one to another, or the feeling affection which they shewed, can hardly be conceived, and therfore much lesse written by any one whatsoever. There they did briefly recount the one to the other their successes: there did they shew the true love and affection of brothers in his prime: there did the Judge embrace Zorayda: there he made her an offer of all that was his: there did hee also cause his daughter to embrace her: there the beautifull Christian, and the most beautifull Moore renewed the teares of them al: there Don Quixote was attentive, without speaking a word, pondering of these rare occurrences, and attributing them to the Chimeras, which he imagined to be incident to Chivalrie: and there they agreed that the Captaine and Zoraida should returne with their brother to Sivill, and thence advise their father of his finding and liberty, that he as well as he might, should come to Sivill to the baptisme and marriage of Zorayda, because the Judge could not possibly returne, or discontinue his journey, in respect that the Indian Fleete

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

was to depart within a moneth from Sivill towards New Spaine.

CHAPTER

XV

Every one in conclusion was joyfull and glad at the captives good successe; and two parts of the night being welnigh spent, they all agreed to repose themselves awhile. Don-Quixote offered himselfe to watch and guard the Castle whilst they slept, lest they should be assaulted by some Giant or other miscreant, desirous to rob the great treasure of beautie that was therein immured and kept. Those that knew him rendred unto him infinite thankes: and withall informed the Judge of his extravagant humor, whereat he was not a little recreated: onely Sancho Pança did fret, because they went so slowly to sleepe, and he alone was best accommodated of them all, by lying downe on his beasts furniture, which cost him dearely, as shall be after recounted. The Ladies being withdrawne into their Chamber, and every one laying himselfe downe where best he might, Don-Quixote sallied out of the Inne, to be Centinell of the Castle as he had promised. And a little before day it hapned, that so sweet and tuneable a voyce touched the Ladies eares, as it obliged them all to listen unto it very attentively, but chiefly Dorotea, who first awaked, and by whose side the young Gentlewoman Donna Clara of Viedma (for so the Judges Daughter was called) slept. None of them could imagine who it was that sung so well without the helpe of any instrument: sometimes it seemed that he sung in the yard, others that it was in the Stable: and being thus in suspence, Cardenio came to the chamber dore, and said, Whosoever is not asleepe, let them give eare, and they shall heare the voice of a Lackey that so chants, as it likewise inchants. Sir, quoth Dorotea, we heare him very well. With this Cardenio departed, and

Dorotea using all the attention possible, heard
that his song was this following.

Which
speakes of
that which
after befell
in the Inne;
and of sundry
other things
worthy to be
knowne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey,
with other strange adventures befallne
in the Inne.

I AM a Mariner to love,
Which in his depths profound
Still sailes, and yet no hope can prove,
Of comming aye to the ground.
I following goe, a glistening starre,
Which I aloofe descry,
Much more resplendent, then those are
That Palinure did spie :
I know not where my course to bend,
And so confusedly,
To see it onely I pretend
Carefull and carelesly.
Her too impertinent regard,
And too much modestie,
The clouds are which mine eyes have bard
From their deserved fee.
O cleere and soule reviving star,
Whose sight doth trie my trust,
If thou thy light from me debar,
Instantly die I must.

The Singer arriving to this point of his song, Dorotea imagined that it would not be amisse to let Donna Clara heare so excellent a voyce, and therefore she jogged her a little on the one and other side, untill she had awaked her, and then said, Pardon me childe for thus interrupting your sweet repose, seeing I doe it to the end you may joy, by hearing one of the best voyces that perhaps you ever heard in your life. Clara awaked at the first drowsily, and did not well understand what Dorotea said, and therefore demaunding of her what she said, she told it her againe; whereupon Donna Clara was also attentive: but scarce had she heard two verses repeated by the early Musitian, when a marvellous trembling invaded her, even as if she

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

had then suffered the grievous fit of a quartane Ague. Wherefore imbracing Dorotea very straitly, she said, Alas, deere Ladie, why did you awake me, seeing the greatest happe that fortune could in this instant have given me, was, to have mine eyes and eares so shut, as I might neither see, nor heare that unfortunate Musician? What is that you say childe, quoth Dorotea, did you not heare one say that the Musitian is but a horse-boy? Hee is no horse-boy, quoth Clara, but a Lord of many townes; and he that hath such firme possession of my soule, as if hee himselfe will not reject it, he shall never be deprived of the dominion thereof. Dorotea greatly wondred at the passionate words of the young girle, whereby it seemed to her that she far surpassed the discretion which so tender yeares did promise: and therefore she replied to her, saying, You speake so obscurely, Lady Clara, as I cannot understand you: expound your selfe more clearly, and tel me what is that you say of soules, and townes, and of this Musitian, whose voyce hath altered you so much: but doe not say any thing to me now; for I would not lose, by listening to your disgusts, the pleasure I take to heare him sing; for me thinkes he resumes his musicke with new verses, and in another tune: in a good houre, quoth Donna Clara; and then, because shee her selfe would not heare him, she stopt her eares with her fingers; whereat Dorotea did also marvell: but being attentive to the Musicke, she heard the Lackey prosecute his song in this manner:

O Sweet and constant hope,
That break'st impossibilities and bryars,
And firmly run st the scope
Which thou thy selfe dost forge to thy desirea.
Be not dismaide to see
At evr'y step thy selfe, nigh death to bee.

Sluggards doe not deserve
The glorie of triumphs or victorie,
Good hap doth never serve
Those, which resist not Fortune manfully,
But weakely fall to ground:
And in soft sloth their senses all confound.

CHAPTER

XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befallene in the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befallne in the Inne.

That Love his glories hold
At a high rate, it reason is and just :
No precious stones nor gold
May be at all compared with loves gust.
And tis a thing most cleare :
Nothing is worth esteeme that cost not deare.
An amorous persistance
Obtaineth oft-times things impossible
And so though I resistance
Finde of my soules desires, in her sterne will ;
I hope, time shall be given,
When I from earth may rech her glorious heaven.

Heere the voyce ended, and Donna Claras sighes began ; all which inflamed Doroteas desire, to know the cause of so sweete a song, and so sad a plaint. And therefore she eftsoones required her, to tell her now what she was about to have said before. Then Clara timorous, lest Luscinda should overheare her, imbracing Dorotea very neerly, laid her mouth so close to Doroteas eare, as she might speake securely without being understood by any other, and said ; he that sings, is, deere Ladie, a Gentlemans sonne of the Kingdome of Aragon, whose father is Lord of two townes, and dwelled right before my fathers house at the Court, and although the windowes of our house were in Winter covered with seare cloth, and in Sommer with lattice, I know not how it happened, but this Gentleman, who went to the schole espied me, and whether it was at the Church, or else where, I am not certaine. Finally, he fell in love with me, and did acquainte me with his affection from his owne windowes that were opposite to mine, with so many tokens and such abundance of teares, as I most forceably beleaved, and also affected him, without knowing how much he loved me : among the signes that he would make me, one was, to joyne the one hand to the other, giving me therby to understand that he would marry me : and although I would be very glad that it might be so ; yet as one alone, and without a mother, I knew not to whom I might communicate the affaire, and did therfore let it rest without affording him any other favour, unlesse it were when my father and his were gone abroad, by lifting up the lattice or

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Searecloth only a little, and permitting him to behold me; for which favor he would shew such signes of joy, as a man would deeme him to be reft of his wits. The time of my fathers departure arriving, and he hering of it, but not from me (for I could never tell it to him) he fell sicke, as farre as I could understand, for grieve, and therefore I could never see him all the day of our departure, to bid him farewell at least with mine eyes: but after we had travelled two daies just as we entred into an Inne in a village, a daies journey from hence, I saw him at the lodging doore, apparrelled so properly like a Lacky, as if I had not borne about me his purtrature in my soule, it had bene impossible to know him. I knew him, and wondred, and was glad withall; and he beheld me unwitting my father, from whose presence he stil hides himselfe when he crosses the waies before me as we travel, or after we arrive at any Inne. And because that I know what he is, and doe consider the paine hee takes by comming thus a foote for my sake, and that with so great toile, I die for sorrow, and where hee puts his feete I also put mine eyes. I know not with what intention he comes nor how he could possibly thus escape from his father, who loves him beyond measure, both because he hath none other hayre, and because the young Gentleman also deserves it, as you will perceive when you see him: and I dare affirme besides, that all that which he saies, he composes extempore, and without any studie; for I have heard that hee is a fine Student, and a great Poet. And every time that I see him, or do heare him sing, I start and tremble like an Aspen leafe, for feare that my father should know him, and thereby come to have notice of our mutuall affections. I have never spoken one word to him in my life, and yet I doe nevertheless love him so much, as without him I shall not be able to live. And this is all, deere Ladie, that I am able to say unto you of the Musician whose voyce hath pleased you so well, as by it alone you might conjecture, that he is not a horse-boy as you said, but rather a Lord of soules, and townes, as I affirmed.

Speake no more Ladie Clara (quoth Dorotea, at that season, kissing her a thousand times): speake no more, I

CHAPTER

XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey.
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befallne in the Inne.

That Love his glories hold
At a high rate, it reason is and just :
No precious stones nor gold
May be at all compared with loves gust.
And tis a thing most cleare :
Nothing is worth esteeme that cost not deare.

An amarous persistance
Obtaineth oft-times things impossible
And so though I resistance
Finde of my soules desires, in her sterne will ;
I hope, time shall be given,
When I from earth may rech her glorious heaven.

Heere the voyce ended, and Donna Claras sighes began ; all which inflamed Doroteas desire, to know the cause of so sweete a song, and so sad a plaint. And therefore she eftsoones required her, to tell her now what she was about to have said before. Then Clara timorous, lest Luscinda should overheare her, imbracing Dorotea very neerly, laid her mouth so close to Doroteas eare, as she might speake securely without being understood by any other, and said ; he that sings, is, deere Ladie, a Gentlemans sonne of the Kingdome of Aragon, whose father is Lord of two townes, and dwelled right before my fathers house at the Court, and although the windowes of our house were in Winter covered with seare cloth, and in Sommer with lattice, I know not how it happened, but this Gentleman, who went to the schole espied me, and whether it was at the Church, or else where, I am not certaine. Finally, he fell in love with me, and did acquainte me with his affection from his owne windowes that were opposite to mine, with so many tokenes and such abundance of teares, as I most forceably beleaved, and also affected him, without knowing how much he loved me : among the signes that he would make me, one was, to joyne the one hand to the other, giving me therby to understand that he would marry me : and although I would be very glad that it might be so ; yet as one alone, and without a mother, I knew not to whom I might communicate the affaire, and did therfore let it rest without affording him any other favour, unlesse it were when my father and his were gone abroad, by lifting up the lattice or

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Searecloth only a little, and permitting him to behold me; for which favor he would shew such signes of joy, as a man would deeme him to be reft of his wits. The time of my fathers departure arriving, and he hering of it, but not from me (for I could never tell it to him) he fell sicke, as farre as I could understand, for grieve, and therefore I could never see him all the day of our departure, to bid him farewell at least with mine eyes: but after we had travelled two daies just as we entred into an Inne in a village, a daies journey from hence, I saw him at the lodging doore, apparelled so properly like a Lacky, as if I had not borne about me his purtrature in my soule, it had bene impossible to know him. I knew him, and wondred, and was glad withall; and he beheld me unwitting my father, from whose presence he stil hides himselfe when he crosses the waies before me as we travel, or after we arrive at any Inne. And because that I know what he is, and doe consider the paine hee takes by comming thus a foote for my sake, and that with so great toile, I die for sorrow, and where hee puts his feete I also put mine eyes. I know not with what intention he comes nor how he could possibly thus escape from his father, who loves him beyond measure, both because he hath none other hayre, and because the young Gentleman also deserves it, as you will perceive when you see him: and I dare affirme besides, that all that which he saies, he composes extempore, and without any studie; for I have heard that hee is a fine Student, and a great Poet. And every time that I see him, or do heare him sing, I start and tremble like an Aspen leafe, for feare that my father should know him, and thereby come to have notice of our mutuall affections. I have never spoken one word to him in my life, and yet I doe nevertheless love him so much, as without him I shall not be able to live. And this is all, deere Ladie, that I am able to say unto you of the Musician whose voyce hath pleased you so well, as by it alone you might conjecture, that he is not a horse-boy as you said, but rather a Lord of soules, and townes, as I affirmed.

Speake no more Ladie Clara (quoth Dorotea, at that season, kissing her a thousand times): speake no more, I

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey,
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befallne in the Inne.

say, but have patience untill it be day-light; for I hope in God so to direct your affaires, as that they shall have the fortunate successe, that so honest beginning deserves. Alas Madam, quoth Donna Clara, what end may be expected, seeing his father is so noble and rich, as he would scarce deeme me worthy to be his sonnes servant, how much lesse his spouse? and for mee to marry my selfe unknowne to my father, I would not doe it for all the world. I desire no other thing, but that the young Gentleman would returne home againe, and leave me alone; perhaps, by not seeing him, and the great distance of the way which we are to travel, my paine which now so much presseth mee, will be somewhat attained, although I dare say, that this remedie which now I have imagined, would availe me but little: for I know not whence with the vengeance, or by what way this affection which I beare him got into me, seeing both I and he are so young as we be, for I beleeve we are much of an age, and I am not yet full sixteene; nor shall be as my father saies, untill Michaelmas next. Dorotea could not contain her laughter, hearing how childishly Donna Clara spoke, to whom she said, Lady let us repose againe, and sleepe that little part of the night which remaines, and when God sends day light, we will prosper, or my hands shall faile me: with this they held their peace, and all the Inne was drowned in profound silence; only the Inkeepers Daughter, and Maritornes were not asleepe, but knowing very wel Don-Quixotes peccant humour, and that he was armed and on horsebacke without the Inne keeping gard, both of them consorted together, and agreed to be some-way merry with him, or at least to passe over some time, in hearing him speake ravingly.

It is therefore to be understood, that there was not in all the Inne any window, which looked out into the field, but one hole in a barne, out of which they were wont to cast their straw: to this hole came the two demy-damzels, and saw Don-Quixote mounted and leaning on his Iavelin, and breathing forth, ever and anone, so dolefull and deepe sighes, as it seemed his soule was plucked away by every one of them: and they noted besides how he said with a soft and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

amorous voice : O my Ladie Dulcinea of Toboso, the sonne CHAPTER
XVI of all beauty, the end and quintessence of discretion, the treasury of sweet countenance and carriage, the store-house of honesty : and finally, the Idea of all that which is profitable, modest, or delightfull in the world ! and what might thy Ladiship be doing at this present ? Hast thou perhaps thy mind now upon thy captive knight, that most wittingly exposeth himselfe to so many dangers for thy sake ? Give unto me tidings of her, O thou Luminary of the three faces, peradventure thou dost now with envy enough behold her, either walking through some Gallery of her sumptuous Pallaces, or leaning on some bay window, and thinking how (saving her honour and greatnesse) she shall mitigate, and asswage the torture which this mine oppressed hart indures for her love, what glory she shall give for my paines, what quiet to my cares, what life to my death, and what guerdon to my services. And thou sonne, which art as I beleeve, by this time saddling of thy horses to get away earely, and go out to see my Mistresse, I request thee as soone as thou shall see her, to salute her in my behalfe, but beware that when thou lookest on her, and dost greet her, that thou doe not kisse her on the face, for if thou dost, I wil become more jealous of thee, then ever thou wast of the swift ingrate, which made thee to run and sweat so much through the plaines of Thessalia, or the brinks of Peneo, for I have forgotten through which of them thou rannest so jealous and inamored. To this point arrived Don-Quixote, when the Inkeepers daughter began to cal him softly unto her and say ; Sir Knight, approach a little hitherward if you please. At which voice Don-Quixote turned his head, and saw by the light of the Moone which shined then very clearely, that he was called too from the hole, which he accounted to be a faire window ful of yron barres, and those costly gylded with gold, wel befitting so rich a Castle as he imagined that Inne to be, and presently in a moment he forged to his own fancie, that once againe as shee had done before, the beautifull Damzell daughter to the Ladie of that Castle, overcome by his love, did returne to sollicite him : and with this thought, because he would not shew

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befalline in the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey,
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

himselfe discourteous and ungratefull, he turned Rozinante about, and came over to the hole, and then having beheld the two wenches hee said : I take pitie on you beautifull Lady, that you have placed your amorous thoughts in a place whence it is not possible to have any correspondence answerable to the desert of your high worth and beauty, whereof you are in no sort to condemne this miserable Knight Errant, whom Love hath wholy disabled to surrender his will to be any other then to her, whom at the first sight he made absolute mistresse of his soule. Pardon me therefore, good Ladie, and retire your selfe to your chamber, and make me not, by any further insinuation of your desires, more unthankefull and discourteous then I would be : and if through the love that you beare me, you finde in me any other thing wherewithall I may serve and pleasure you, so that it bee not love it selfe, demaund it boldly, for I do swear unto you by mine absent yet sweetest enemy, to bestow it upon you incontinently, yea though it be a loke of Medusas haire, which are all of Snakes, or the very Sunne beames inclosed in a violl of glasse.

My Ladie needs none of those things Sir Knight answered Maritornes : What doth shee then want, discreet Matron ? quoth Don-Quixote ; only one of your faire hands, said Maritornes, that therewithall shee may disburden her selfe of some part of those violent desires, which compelled her to come to this window, with so great danger of her honour : for if her Lord and Father knew of her comming, the least slice he would take off her, should bee at the least an eare. I would faine once see that, quoth Don-Quixote, but I am sure he will beware how hee doe it, if he have no list to make the most disastrous end that ever father made in this world, for having laied violent hands on the delicate limmes of his amorous daughter. Maritornes verily perswaded her selfe, that Don-Quixote would give up his hand as he was requested ; and having already contrived in her mind what she would do, descended with all haste from the hole, and going into the Stable, fetched out Sancho Panças his Asses halter, and returned againe with very great speed, just as Don-Quixote (standing up on Rozinantes saddle that he

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

might the better reach the barred windowes, whereat hee imagined the wounded Damzel remained) did, stretching up his hand, say unto her. Hold Lady the hand, or as I may better say, the executioner of earthly miscreants: hold, I say, that hand, which no other woman ever touched before, not even shee her selfe that hath intyre possession of my whole body, nor doe I give it to you, to the end you should kisse it; but that you may behold the contexture of the sinnewes, the knitting of the muscles, and the spaciositie and breadth of the veines, whereby you may collect, how great ought the force of that arme to be whereunto such a hand is knit. We shall see that presently, quoth Maritornes, and then making a running knot on the halter, shee cast it on the wrest of his hand, and then descending from the hole, shee tyed the other end of the halter very fast to the locke of the barne dore. Don-Quixote feeling the roughnesse of the halter about his wrest, said: It rather seemes that you grate my hand, then that you cherish it: but yet I pray you, not to handle it so roughly, seeing it is in no fault of the evill which my will doth unto you: nor is it comly that you should revenge or disburden the whole bulke of your indignation on so small a part: remember that those which love well, doe not take so cruell revenge. But no body gave eare to these words of Don-Quixote: for as soone as Maritornes had tyed him, she and the other almost burst for laughter, ranne away, and left him tyed in such manner, as it was impossible for him to loose himselfe.

He stood, as we have recounted, on Rozinante his saddle, having all his arme thrust in at the hole, and fastned by the wrist to the locke, and was in very great doubt and feare, that if Rozinante budged never so little on any side hee should fall and hang by the arme; and therefore he durst not once use the least motion of the world, although he might well have expected from Rozinantes patience, and milde spirit, that if he were suffered, he would stand still a whole age without stirring himselfe. In fine, Don-Quixote seeing himselfe tyed, and that the Ladies were departed, began straight to imagine that all that had beeene done by way of

CHAPTER
XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey,
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XVI

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange adventures befallne in the Inne.

inchauntment, as the last time, when in the very same Castle the enchanted Moore (the Carrier) had so fairely belaboured him: and then to himselfe did he execrate his owne want of discretion and discourse, seeing that having escaped out of that castle so evill dight the first time, hee would after adventure to enter into it the second: for it was generally observed by Knights Errant, that when they had once tried an adventure, and could not finish it, it was a token that it was not reserved for them, but for some other; and therefore would never prove it againe. Yet for all this he drew forward his arme, to see if he might deliver himselfe; but he was so well bound, as all his indeavours proved vaine. It is true, that he drew it very warily, lest Rozinante should stirre: and although he would faine have set, and settled himself in the saddle, yet could he doe no other but stand, or leave the arme behind. There was many a wish for Amadis his sword, against which no enchantment whatsoeuer could prevale: there succeeded the malediction of his fates; there the exaggerating of the want that the world should have of his presence, all the while hee abode inchaunted (as hee infallibly beleeved hee was) in that place. There he anew remembred his beloved Lady, Dulcinea of Toboso: There did hee call oft enough on his good Squire Sancho Pança, who intombed in the bowels of sleepe, and stretched along on the pannell of his Asse, did dreame, at that instant, but little of the mother that bore him. There he invoked the wise men, Lirgandeo and Alquife, to helpe him: and finally, the morning did also there overtake him, so full of despaire and confusion, as hee roared like a Bull; for he had no hope that by day light any cure could be found for his care, which he deemed would be everlasting, because he fully accounted himselfe inchaunted; and was the more induced to thinke so, because he saw that Rozinante did not move little nor much: and therefore he supposed, that both he and his horse should abide in that state without eating, drinking, or sleeping, untill that either the malignant influence of the Starres were passed, or some greater Inchanter had disenchaunted him.

But he deceived himselfe much in his beleefe: for scarce
202

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

did the day begin to peepe, when there arrived foure horse-men to the Inne dore, very well appointed, and having their snaphaunces hanging at the pomell of their saddles, they called at the Inne dore (which yet stood shut) and knocked very hard ; which being perceived by Don-Quixote from the place where he stood Centinell, he said with a very lowd and arrogant voice. Knights or Squires, or whatsoeuer else ye bee, you are not to knocke any more at the gates of that Castle, seeing it is evident, that at such houres as this, either they which are within, doe repose them, or else are not wont to open Fortresses untill Phœbus hath spread his beames over the earth : therefore stand backe, and expect till it bee cleare day, and then we will see whether it be just or no, that they open their gates unto you. What a Divell, what Castle or Fortresse is this, quoth one of them, that it should bind us to use all those circumstances ? if thou beest the Inkeeper, command that the dore be opened ; for we are travailers, that will tarry no longer then to bait our horses, and away, for we ride in post hast. Doth it seeme to you, Gentlemen, quoth Don-Quixote, that I looke like an Inne-keeper ? I know not what thou lookest like, answered the other, but well I know that thou speakest madly, in calling this Inne a Castle. It is a Castle, replyed Don-Quixote, yea and that one of the best in this Province, and it hath people within it which have had a Scepter in hand, and a crown on their head : It were better said quite contrarie, replyed the traveller, the Scepter on the head, and the Crowne in the hand. But perhaps (and so it may well be) there is some company of Players within, who doe very usually hold the Scepters, and weare those crownes whereof thou talkest : for in such a paulyry Inne as this is, and where I heare so little noise, I cannot beleeve any one to be lodged, worthy to weare a crowne, or beare a scepter. Thou knowest but little of the world, replied Don-Quixote, seeing thou dost so much ignore the chances that are wont to befall in Chivalry. The fellowes of him that entertained this prolix dialogue with Don-Quixote, waxed weary to heare them speak idly so long together, and therfore turned again to knocke with great fury at the doore, and that in such

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey,
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVI

Wherin is
recounted the
History of
the Lackey,
with other
strange
adventures
befalne in
the Inne.

sort, as they not only waked the Inkeeper, but also all the guests: and so he arose to demaund their pleasure.

In the meane while it hapned, that one of the horses whereon they rode, drew neere to smell Rozinante, that melancholy and sadly with his eares cast downe, did sustayne without moving his out-stretched Lord: and he being indeed of flesh and bloud, although hee resembled a blocke of wood, could not choose but feele it, and turne to smell him againe, who had thus come to cherish and entertaine him: and scarce had he stirred but a thought from thence, when Don-Quixotes feete, that were joyned, slipt asunder, and tumbling from the saddle, had doubtlesly faine to the ground, had he not remayned hanging by the arme: a thing that caused him to indure so much paine, as he verily beleeved that either his wrist was a cutting, or his arme a tearing off from his body: and he hung so neare to the ground, as he touched it with the tops of his toes; all which turned to his prejudice; for having felt the little which he wanted to the setting of his feete wholly on the earth, hee laboured and drew al that he might to reach it; much like unto those that get the Strapado, with the condition to touch or not to touch; who are themselves a cause to increase their owne torture, by the earnestnesse wherewith they stretch themselves; deceived by the hope they have to touch the ground if they can stretch themselves but a little further.

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne.



0 many were the outcryes which Don-Quixote made, as the Inne-keeper opened the dore very hastily and affrighted, to see who it was that so roared: and those that stood without did also the same. Mariternes, whom the cryes had also awaked, imagining straight what it might be, went into the barne, and unperceived of any, loosed the halter that sustained Don-Quixote, and forthwith hee fell to the ground in the presence of the Inkeeper and the travellers; who comming towardes him, demaunded the occasion why he did so unmeasurably roare? he without making any answere, tooke off the halter from his wrest, and getting up, he leaped upon Rozinante, imbraced his target, set his launce into the wrest, and wheeling about a good part of the field, returned with a halfe gallop, saying: whosoever shall dare to affirme that I have not beene with just title inchaunted: if my Lady the Princesse Micomicona will give me leave to doe it, I say that he lies, and I doe presently challenge him to single combat. The new travailers were amazed at Don-Quixotes words, but the Host removed that wonder by informing them what hee was, and that they should make no account of his words, for the man was bereft of his wits: then they demanded of the Inkeeper, if there had arrived to his Inne, a young Stripling of some fifteene yeeres old or thereabouts, apparellled like a horseboy, and having such and such markes and tokens: and then gave the very signes of Donna Claras lover. The Host made answer that there were so many people in his Inne as hee had taken no notice of him for whom they demaunded. But one of them having seene

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne.

the Coach wherein the Judge came, said: questionlesly he must be here, for this is the Coach that they say, he hath followed: let therefore one of us remayne at the dore, and the rest enter to seeke him out. Yea and it will not be from the purpose, if one of us ride about without the Inne, lest he should make an escape from us by the wals of the yard. We will doe so, said another of them, and thus two of them entred into the house, one staied at the dore, and the other did compasse the Inne about. The In-keeper beheld all, but could never judge aright the reason why they used all this diligence, although he easily beleaved that they sought for the youth whose markes they had told unto him.

By this the day was growen cleere, and as well by reason thereof, as through the outcries of Don-Quixote, all the strangers were awake, and did get up, especially both the Ladies Clara and Dorotea: for the one, through feare to have her lover so neere, and the other with desire to see him, could sleepe but very little all that night. Don-Quixote perceiving that none of the foure travellers made any account of him, or answered his challenge, was ready to burst with wrath and despite: and if he could any wise have found that it was tollerated by the statutes of Chivalry, that a Knight Errant might have lawfully undertaken any enterprize, having plighted his word and faith, not to attempt any, until he had finished that which he had first promised, he would have assailed them all, and made them maugre their teeth to have answered him. But because it seemed to him not so expedient nor honourable, to begin any new adventure, untill he had installed Micomicona in her Kingdome, he was forced to be quiet, expecting to see wherunto the indeavours and diligence of those foure travellers tended: the one whereof found out the youth that hee searched, asleepe by another Lackey, little dreaming that any bodie did looke for him; and much lesse would finde him out thus. The man drew him by the arme, and said, truely, Don Lewis, the habit that you weare answers very well your calling, and the bedde whereon you lie, the care and tendernes wherewith your mother did nurse you:

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the youth hereat rub'd his drowsie eyes, and beheld very leisurely him that did hold him fast, and knew him forthwith to be one of his fathers servants; wherat he was so amazed as he could not speake a word for a great while: and the Servingman continuing his speech, said, Here is nothing else to be done, Lord Lewis, but that you be patient and depart againe with us towards home, if you be not pleased to have your father and my Lord depart out of this world to the other, for no lesse may be expected from the woe wherein he rests for your absence. Why, how did my father know, said Don Lewis, that I came this way, and in this habit? A Student, answered the other, to whom you bewrayed your intention, did discover it, moved through the compassion he tooke to heare your fathers lamentations when he found you missing: and so he dispatcht foure of his men in your search, and we are all at your service, more joyfull then may be imagined, for the good dispatch wherewithall we shall returne, and carie you to his sight, which doth love you so much. That shall be as I please, or heaven will dispose, said Don Lewis. What would you please, or what should heaven dispose of other, then that you agree to returne; for certainly you shall not do the contrary, nor is it possible you should? All these reasons that passed betweene them both, did the Lackey that lay by Don Lewis here, and arising from thence, he went and told all that passed to Don Fernando, Cardenio, and all the rest that were gotten up. To whom he tolde how the man gave the title of Don to the boy, and recounted the speech he used, and how he would have him returne to his fathers house: which the youth refused to doe. Whereupon, and knowing already what a good voyce the heavens had given him, they greatly desired to be more particularly informed what he was: and intended also to helpe him, if any violence were offered unto him, and therefore went unto the place where he was, and stood contending with his servant.

Dorotea issued by this out of her chamber, and in her companie Donna Clara, all perplexed. Dorotea calling Cardenio aside, told unto him succinctly all the historie

CHAPTER
XVII

Wherin are
prosecuted
the wonder-
full adven-
tures of the
Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are
prosecuted
the wonder-
full adven-
tures of the
Inne.

of the Musitian, and Donna Clara: and he rehearsed to her againe all that passed of the Servingmens arrival that came in his pursuit, which he did not speake so low, but that Donna Clara over-heard him, whereat she indured such alteration, as she had falne to the ground, if Dorotea running towards her, had not held her up. Cardenio intreated Dorotea to returne with the other to her chamber, and he would endeavour to bring the matter to some good passe, which they presently performed. The foure that were come in Don Lewis his search were by this all of them entred into the Inne, and had compassed him about, perswading him that he would, cutting off all delayes, returne to comfort his father. He answered that he could not doe it in any sort, untill he had finished an adventure, which imported him no lesse then his life, his honour, and his soule. The servants urged him then saying, that they would in no sort goe backe without him, and therefore would carrie him home, whether he would or no. That shall not you doe, quoth Don Lewis, if it be not that you carrie me home dead: and in this season all the other Gentlemen were come into the contention, but chiefly Cardenio, Don Fernando and his Comaradas, the Iudge, the Curate, and the Barber, and Don-Quixote; for now it seemed to him needesse to guard the Castle any more. Cardenio, who knew already the History of the Youth, demaunded of those that would carie him away, what reason did move them to seeke to take that Ladde away against his will? We are moved upto it, answered one of them, by this reason that we shall therby save his fathers life, who for the absence of this Gentleman is in danger to loose it. To this said Don Lewis, it is to no end to make relation of mine affaires here. I am free, and will returne if I please: and if not, no one shall constraine me to doe it perforce. Reason shall constraine you good Sir to doe it, quoth the man, and when that cannot prevale with you, it shall with us, to put that in execution for which we be come, and which [we] are bound to doe. Let us know this affaire from the beginning, said the Iudge then to those men: Sir, quoth one of them, who knew him very well, as

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

his Masters next neighbour : Master Iustice, doth not your worship know this Gentleman, who is your neighbours sonne, and hath absented himselfe from his fathers house in an habite so undecent and discrepant from his calling, as you may perceive ? The Judge beheld him then somewhat more attentively, knew him, and imbracing of him, said, What toyes are these, Don Lewis, or what cause hath beene of efficacie sufficient to move you to come away in this manner and attyre, which answers your calling so ill ? The teares stooke then in the young Gentlemans eyes, and hee could not answere a word to the Judge, who bade the foure Servingmen appease themselves, for all things should bee done to their satisfaction, and then taking Don Lewis apart, hee intreated him to tell him the occasion of that his departure.

And whilst hee made this and other demaunds to the Gentleman, they heard a great noise at the Inne doore ; the cause whereof was, that two guests which had lye there that night, seeing all the people busied to learne the cause of the foure horsemens comming, had thought to have made an escape scot-free, without defraying their expences : but the Inkeeper who attended his owne affaires with more diligence then other mens did stay them at their going forth, and demaunded his money, upbraiding their dishonest resolution with such words, as moved them to returne him an answere with their fists, which they did so roundly, as the poore Host was compelled to raise the crie, and demaund succour. The Hostesse and her daughter could see no man so free from occupation as Don-Quixote, to whom the daughter said, I request you, Sir Knight, by the vertue that God hath given you to succour my poore father, whom two badde men are grinding like corne. To this Don-Quixote answered very leisurely, and with great gravitie ; Beautifull damzell, your petition cannot preuale at this time, for as much as I am hindred from undertaking any other adventure, untill I have finished one wherein my promise hath ingaged me ; and all that I can now doe in your Service, is, that which I shall say now unto you : run unto your father, and bid him continue and maintaine his

CHAPTER
XVII
Wherin are
prosecuted
the wonder-
full adven-
tures of the
Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne.

conflict manfully, the best that hee may, untill I demaund license of the Princesse Micomicona, to helpe him out of his distresse; for if she will give it unto me, you may make ful account that hee is delivered. Sinner that I am (quoth Maritornes, who was by and heard what he said) before you shall be able to obtaine that license, of which you speake, my Master will be departed to the other world. Worke you so, Lady, quoth Don-Quixote, that I may have the licence; for so that I may have it, it will make no great matter, whether he bee in the other world or no: for even from thence would I bring him backe againe, in despit of the other world it selfe, if it durst contradict me: or at least wise I will take such a revenge of those that doe send him to the other world, as you shall remaine more then meanely contented: and so without replying any more, he went, and fell on his knees before Dorotea, demanding of her in Knightly and errant Phrases, that she would deigne to licence him to goe and succour the Constable of that Castle, who was then plunged in a deepe distresse: The Princesse did grant him leave very willingly, and he presently buckling on his Target, and laying hands on his Sword, ranne to the Inne dore, where yet the two guests stood handsomly tugging the Inkeeper. But as soone as he arrived, he stopt and stood still, although Maritornes and the Hostesse demaunded of him twice or thrice the cause of his restinessse, in not assisting her Lord and husband. I stay, quoth Don-Quixote, because according to the lawes of armes, it is not permitted to me to lay hand to my Sword against Squire-like men that are not dubbed Knights. But call to me here my Squire Sancho, for this defence and revenge concernes him, as his duety. This passed at the Inne dore, where fists and blowes were interchangeably given and taken in the best sort, although to the Inkeepers cost, and to the rage and grieve of Maritornes, the Hostesse and her daughter, who were like to runne wood, beholding Don-Quixotes cowardise, and the mischiefe their Master, husband, and father endured. But here let us leave them; for there shall not want one to succour him, or if not, let him suffer; and all those that wittingly undertake things

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

beyond their power and force: and let us turne backward to heare that which Don-Lewis answered the Judge, whom we left somewhat apart with him, demaunding the cause of his comming a foot, and in so base array: to which the Youth wringing him hard by the hands, as an argument that some extraordinary griefe pinched his heart, and shedding many teares, answered in this manner.

I know not what else I may tell you deere Sir, but that from the instant that heaven made us neighbours, and that I saw Donna Clara, your daughter and my Ladie, I made her commaundresse of my will; and if yours, my true Lord and Father, doe not hinder it, she shall be my Spouse this very day. For her sake have I abandoned my Fathers house, and for her I did on this attire, to follow her wheresoever she went, as the arrow doth the marke, or the marriner the north starre; she is, as yet, no further acquainted with my desires, then as much as she might understand some times, by the teares which she saw mine eyes distill a farre off. Now Sir, you know the riches and nobilitie of my dissent, and how I am my fathers sole heire, and if it seeme unto you that these be conditions, whereupon you may venture to make mee throughly happy, accept of me presently for your sonne in law: for if my father, borne away by others his designes, shall not like so well of this good which I have sought out for my selfe, yet time hath more force to undoe, and change the affaires, then mens wils: heere the amorous Gentleman held his peace, and the Judge remained astonied as well at the grace and discretion wherewith Don Lewis had discovered his affections unto him, as also to see himselfe in such a passe, that as he knew not what course he might best take in so sodaine, and unexpected a matter: and therefore hee answered no other thing at that time, but onely badde him to settle his minde, and entertaine the time with his servants, and deale with them, to expect that day, because he might have leasure to consider what might be most convenient for all. Don Lewis did kisse his hands perforce, and did bathe them with teares, a thing able to moove a heart of Marble, and much more the Judges, who (as a wise man) did presently perceive,

CHAPTER
XVII
Wherin are
prosecuted
the wonder-
full adven-
tures of the
Inne.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne.

how beneficall and honourable was that preferment for his daughter: although hee could have wished, if it had beene possible to effect it with the consent of Don Lewis his Father, who he knew did purpose to have his sonne made a Noble man of Title.

By this time, the Inkeeper and his guests had agreed, having paid him all that they ought more by Don-Quixotes perswasion, and good reasons, then by any menaces. And Don Lewis his servants expected the end of the Judges discourse, and his resolution: when the devill (who never sleeps) would have it, at that very time entred into the Inne, the Barber from whom Don-Quixote tooke away the Helmet of Mambrino, and Sancho Pança the furniture of the Asse, wherof he made an exchange for his owne: which Barber leading his Beast to the stable, saw Sancho Pança, who was mending some part of the pannell: and as soone as he had eyed him, he knew him, and presently set upon Sancho, saying; A Sir Theefe have I found you heere with all the furniture, whereof you rob'd mee? Sancho that saw himselfe thus assaulted unexpectedly, and had heard the disgraceful termes which the other used, laying fast hold on the pannell with the one hand, gave the Barber such a buffet with the other, as he bathed all his teeth in bloud: but yet for all that, the Barber held fast his gripe of the pannell, and therewithall cried out so loud, as all those that were in the house came to the noyse, and conflict, and he said, I call for the King and Iustice, for this theefe and robber by the high waies goeth about to kill me, because I seeke to recover mine owne goods. Thou liest, quoth Sancho, for I am not a robber by the high waies; for my Lord Don-Quixote wonne those spoyles in a good warre. By this time Don-Quixote himselfe was come thither, not a little proud to see how well his Squire defended himselfe, and offended his adversary, and therefore hee accounted him from thenceforth to be a man of valour, and purposed in his minde to dubbe him Knight, on the first occasion that should be offered, because hee thought that the Order of Knighthood would be well imployed by him.

Among other things that the Barber said in the dis-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

course of his contention, this was one: Sirs, this pannell
is as certainly mine, as the death which I owe unto God,
and I know it as well as if I had bred it, and there is my
Asse in the Stable, who will not permit me to tell a lie: or
otherwise do but trie the pannell on him, and if it fit him
not justly, I am content to remaine infamous: and I can
say more, that the very day wherein they tooke my pannell

CHAPTER.
XVII

Wherin are
prosecuted
the wonder-
full adven-
tures of the
Inne.

from mee, they robbed mee likewise of a new brazen Basen,
which was never used, and cost mee a crowne. Here Don-
Quixote could no longer containe himselfe from speaking,
and so thrusting himselfe betweene them two, and putting
them asunder, and causing the pannell to be laid publikely
on the ground, untill the truth were decided, he said; To
the end that you may perceive the cleere and manifest error,
wherein this good Squire lives, see how hee calst that a basen,
which is, was, and shall bee the Helmet of Mambrino, which
I tooke away perforse from him in faire warre, and made
my selfe Lord therof, in a lawfull and warlike manner.
About the pannell I will not contend, for that which I can
say therein is, that my Squire Sancho demaunded leave of
me, to take away the furniture of this vanquished cowards
horse, that he might adorne his own withall: I gave him
authoritie to doe it, and he tooke them: and for his con-
verting thereof from a Horses furniture into a pannell, I
can give none other reason then the ordinarie one, to wit,
that such transformations are usually seene in the successes
of chivalry: for confirmation whereof, friend Sancho, runne
speedily, and bring mee out the helmet, which this good
man avoucheth to be a basen: by my faith Sir, quoth
Sancho, if we have no better proofe of our intention, then
that which you say, I say that the helmet of Mambrino, is
as arrant a bason, as this goodmans furniture is a pannell.
Doe what I commaund, said Don-Quixote: I cannot beleeve
that all the things in this Castle will be guided by enchant-
ment. Sancho went for the basen, and brought it: and as
soone as Don-Quixote saw it, he tooke it in his hands and
said: See Sirs, with what face can this impudent Squire
affirme, that this is a basen, and not the helmet that I
have mentioned: and I sweare to you all by the order of

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherin are prosecuted the wonderfull adventures of the Inne.

Knight hood which I professe, that this is the very same helmet which I wonne from him, without having added or taken any thing from it. That it is questionlesse, quoth Sancho: for since the time that my Lord wonne it untill now, he never fought but one battell with it, when he delivered the unlucky chained men; and but for this Basen-Helmet, he had not escaped so free as hee did, so thicke a showre of stones rained all the time of that conflict.

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein are decided the controversies of the Helmet of Mambrinus, and of the pan nell, with other strange and most true adventures.



GOOD Sirs quoth the Barber, what do you thinke of that which is affirmed by these Gentlemen, who yet contend that this is not a basen, but a helmet? He that shall say the contrary, quoth Don Quixote, I will make him know that hee lies, if he be a Knight; and if he be but a Squire, that he lies and lies againe a thousand times. Our Barber, who was also present as one that knew Don Quixotes humour very wel, would fortifie his folly, and make the jest passe yet a little farther, to the end that they all might laugh: and therefore speaking to the other Barber, he said. Sir Barber, or what else you please, know that I am also of your occupation, and have had my writ of examination and approbation in that trade more then these thirty yeares, and am one that knowes very well all the Instruments of Barbery whatsoever; and have beene besides in my youthfull daies, a souldier, and doe

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

therefore likewies know what is a helmet, and what a morrion, and what a close Castle, and other things touching warfare, I meane, all the kind of armes that a souldier ought to have: and therefore I say, (still submitting my selfe to the better opinion) that this peece, which is laid heere before us, and which this good Knight holdes in his hand, not onely is not a Barbars basan, but also is so farre from being one, as is white from blacke, or veritie from untruth, yet doe I withall affirme, that although it is an helmet, yet it is not a compleate helmet. No truly, quoth Don-Quixote, for it wants the halfe, to wit, the neather part, and the beaver. It is very true, quoth the Curate, who very well understood his friend the Barber his intention; and the same did Cardenio, Don Fernando, and his fellowes confirme: yea and even the Judge himselfe, had not Don Lewis his affaire perplexed his thoughts, would for his part have holpen the jest well forward. But the earnestnesse of that affaire held his minde so busied, as he little or nothing attended the pastime. Lord have mercy upon me, quoth the other Barber, then halfe beside himselfe, and is it possible that so many Honourable men should say that this is no bason, but a helmet? this is a thing able to strike admiration into a whole Vniversitie, how discreet soever it were: tis enough, if this basen must needs be a helmet, the pannell must also bee a horses Furniture, as this Gentleman sayes. To mee it seemes a pannell, quoth Don-Quixote, but as I have said, I will not meddle with it, nor determine whether it be a pannell or the capparison of a horse. Therein is nothing else to be done, said the Curate, but that Sir Don-Quixote say it once; for in these matters of Chivalrie, all these Noblemen, and my selfe, doe give unto him the pricke, and the price. I sweare unto you by Iove, good Sirs, quoth Don-Quixote, that so many and so strange are the things which have befallen me in this Castle, these two times that I have lodged therein, as I dare avouch nothing affirmatively of any thing that shall be demaunded of me concerning the things contayned in it, for I doe infallibly imagine, that all the adventures which passe in it, are guided by inchauntment: the first time, I was very much

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherin
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherin
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

vexed by an inchaunted Moore, that is in it: and Sancho himselfe sped not very well with the Moores followers: and yesternight I stood hanging almost two houres space by this arme, without knowing how, or how that disgrace befell me; so that for me to medle now in so confused and difficult a matter, as to deliver mine opinion, were to passe a rash judgement: So that they which say that this is a bason, and no helmet, I have already made answer; but whether this bee a pannell, or furniture, I dare pronounce no definitive sentence, but only remit it to your discreet opinions: perhaps, because you are not dubbed Knights as I am, the inchauntings of this place will have no power over you, and your understandings shall be free, and able to judge of the things in this Castle really, and truly, and not as they seem unto me. Doubtlesse, quoth Don Fernando, Don-Quixote saies very well, that the definition of this case belongs unto us; and therefore, and because wee may proceede in it upon the better and more solid grounds, I will secretly take the suffrages of all those Gentlemen, and afterwards make a cleare and full relation of what shall come of them.

To those that knew Don-Quixote his humour, this was a matter of marvailous laughter, and sport; but to such as were not acquainted therewithall, it seemed the greatest folly of the World, especially to Don Lewis, and his foure servants, and with other three passengers that had arrived by chance to the Inne, and seemed to be troupers of the holy Brotherhood, as indeede they were: but he that was most of all beside himselfe for wrath, was the Barber, whose basen they had transformed before his owne face into the helmet of Mambrino, and whose pannell he made full account should likewise be turned into the rich furniture, and equipage of a great horse. All of them laughed hartily, to see Don Fernando goe up and downe, taking the suffrages of this man and that, and rounding every one of them in the eare, that they might declare in secret whether that was a pannell or a furniture, for which such deadly contention had passed. After that hee had taken the suffrages of so many as knew Don-Quixote, he said very lowdly, The truth is, good fellow, that I grow weary of demaunding so

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

many opinions ; for I can no sooner demaund of any man what I desire to know, but they forthwith answeare me, how it is meere madnesse to affirme, that this is the pannell of an Asse, but rather the furniture of a Horse, yea and of a chiefe horse of service ; and therefore you must have patience : for in despite both of you and of your Asse, and notwithstanding your weake allegations and worse prooves, it is, and will continue the furniture of a great horse. Let me never injoy a place in heaven, quoth the Barber, if you all be not deceived ; and so may my soule appeare before God, as it appeares to mee to be a pannell, and no horse-furniture : but the law carries it away, and so fare well it : and yet surely I am not drunke ; for unlesse it be by sinning, my fast hath not beene broken this day.

The follies which the Barber uttered, stirred no lesse laughter among them, then did the rorings of Don-Quixote, who then spoke in this manner : here is now no more to be done, but that every man take up his owne goods, and to whom God hath given them, let S: Peter give his blessing. Then said one of the fourre Servingmen, if this were not a jest premeditated, and made of purpose, I could not perswade my selfe, that men of so good understanding as al these are, or seeme to be, should dare to say, and affirme, that this is not a basen, nor that a pannell : but seeing that they averre it so constantly, I have cause to suspect, that it cannot bee without mystery to affirme a thing so contrary to that which very truth it selfe and experience demonstrate unto us : for I doe vow (and saying so he rapt out a round oath or two) that as many as are in the world, should never make me beleeve that this is no basen, nor that no pannell of a hee Asse : it might as well bee of a shee Asse, quoth the Curate : that comes all but to one, replied the other ; for the question consists not therein, but whether it be a pannell or not, as you doe avouch ? Then one of the Troupers of the holy Brotherhood (who had listned to their disputation, and was growne full of choler to heare such an errour maintayned) said : it is as very a pannell, as my father is my father ; and hee that hath said, or shall say the contrary, is, I beleeve, turned into a grape. Thou lyest like

CHAPTER
XVIII

Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

a clownish knave, quoth Don-Quixote, and lifting up his Iavelin, which he alwayes held in his hand, hee discharged such a blow at the Troupers pate, as if hee had not avoided, it would have throwen him to the ground: the Iaveline was broken by the force of the fall into splinters; and the other Troupers, seeing their fellow so misused, cried out for helpe, and assistance for that holy Brotherhood: the Inkeeper, who also was one of the same fraternity, ranne in for his rod of Justice and his sword, and then stood by his fellowes. Don Lewis his foure servants compassed him about, lest he should attempt to escape whilst the tumult indured. The Barber seeing all the house turned upside-downne, laid hand againe upon his pannell, and the same did Sancho.

Don-Quixote set hand to his Sword, and assaulted the Troupers: Don Lewis cryed to his Servingmen, that they should leave him, and goe to helpe Don-Quixote, Cardenio, and Don Fernando; for all of them tooke Don-Quixotes part. The Curate cryed out, the Hostesse shrieked, her daughter squeaked, Maritornes howled, Dorotea stood confused, Luscinda amazed, and Donna Clara dismayed: the Barber battered Sancho, and Sancho pounded him againe. Don Lewis, on whom one of his Servingmen had presumed to lay hands, and hold him by the arme, gave him such a pass on the mouth, as hee broke his teeth, and then the Judge tooke him into his owne protection. Don Fernando had gotten one of the Troupers under his feete, where he stood belabouring him at his pleasure. The Inkeeper renewed his outcry, and reinforced his voice, demaunding aide for the holy Brotherhood: So that all the Inne seemed nothing else but plaints, cryes, schritches, confusions, feares, dreades, disgraces, slashes, buffets, blowes, spurnings, and effusion of bloud.

In the midst of this Chaos, and Labyrinth of things, Don-Quixote beganne to imagine, and fancie to himselfe, that he was at that very time plunged up to the eares in the discord, and conflict of King Agramante his camp; and therefore he said with a voice that made all the Inne to tremble. All of you hold your hands, all of you put up

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

your swords, all of you be quiet, and listen to mee if any of you desire to continue alive: That great and monstrous voice made them all stand still: thereupon he thus proceeded; did not I tell you, Sirs, that this Castle was inchaunted, and that some legion of Divels did inhabit it? in confirmation whereof I would have you but to note with your owne eyes, how the very discord of King Agramants camp is transferred hither, and passed ever among us: looke how there they fight for the sword, here for the horse, yonder for the Eagle, beyond for the helmet; and all of us fight, and none of us know for what. Come therefore you Master Iustice, and you Master Curate, and let the one represent King Agramant, and the other King Sobrino, and make peace and atonement among us: for I swear by almighty Love, that it is great wrong and pitty, that so many Noblemen, as we are here, should be slaine for so slight causes.

The Troupers, which did not understand Don-Quixotes manner of speech, and saw themselves very ill handled by Don Fernando and Cardenio, would in no wise be pacified; But the Barber was content, by reason that in the conflict both his beard and his pannell had beene torn in pieces. Sancho to his Masters voyce was quickly obedient, as became a dutifull servant. Don Lewis his foure Servingmen stood also quiet, seeing how little was gained in being other: onely the Inkeeper persisted as before, affirming that punishment was due unto the insolencies of that mad man, who every foot confounded and disquieted his Inne. Finally, the rumor was pacified for that time; the pannell remained for a horse furniture untill the day of judgment; the bason for a helmet, and the Inne for a Castle in Don-Quixotes imagination. All the broiles being now appeased, and all men accorded by the Judges and Curates perswasions; Then began Don Lewis his servants againe to urge him to depart with them: and whilst he and they debated the matter together, the Judge communicated the whole to Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the Curate desiring to know their opinions concerning that affaire, and telling them all that Don Lewis had said unto him; whereupon they agreed,

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

that Don Fernando should tell the Servingmen what he himselfe was, and how it was his pleasure that Don Lewis should goe with him to Andaluzia, where he should be cherished, and accounted of by the Marquesse his brother, according unto his calling and deserts : for he knew well Don Lewis his resolution to be such, as he would not returne into his fathers presence at that time, although they tore him into pieces. Don Fernando his quality, and Don Lewis his intention beeing understood by the four, they agreed among themselves, that three of them should goe backe, to beare the tidings of all that had passed to his father, and the other should abide there to attend on him, and never to leave him untill they returned to fetch him home, or knew what else his father would commaund. And in this sort was that monstrous bulke of division and contention, reduced to some forme by the authoritie of Agramant, and the wise-dome of King Sobrino.

But the enemy of concord, and the adversary of peace, finding his projects to be thus illuded, and condemned, and seeing the little fruite he had gotten by setting them all by the eares, resolved once againe to trie his wits, and stirre up new discords and troubles, which befell in this manner : The Troupers were quieted, having understood the calling of those with whom they had contended, and retyred themselves from the brawle, knowing that howsoever the cause succeeded, they themselves should have still the worst end of the staffe : but one of them, who was the very same whom Don Fernando had buffeted so well, remembred, how among many other warrants which hee had to apprehend malefactors, he had one for Don-Quixote, whom the Holy brotherhood had commaunded to be apprehended for freeing of the Gally-slaves (a disaster which Sancho had before hand with very great reason feared.) As soone as he remembred it, hee would needes trie whether the signes that were given him of Don-Quixote, did agree with his person : and so taking out of his bosome a scroule of Parchment, hee presently found out that which he looked for ; and reading it a while very leisurely, as one that was himselfe no great Clerk, at every other word he looked on Don-Quixote, and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

confronted the markes of his warrant with those of Don-Quixotes face, and found that he was infallibly the man that was therein mentioned : and scarce was he perswaded that it was hee, when folding up his parchment, and holding the warrant in his left hand, he laid holde on Don-Quixotes choller with the right so strongly, as he could hardly breath : and cried out aloude, saying, Aide for the Holy Brotherhood : and that you may perceive how I am in good earnest, reade that warrant, wherein you shall finde, that this robber by the high way side is to be apprehended. The Curate tooke the warrant, and perceived very well that the Trouper said true, and that the markes agreed very neere with Don-Quixotes ; who seeing himselfe so abused by that base rascal, as he accounted him, his choler being mounted to her height, and all the bones of his body crashing for wrath, he seised as well as he could, with both his hands on the Troupers throate, and that in such sort, as if he had not beene speedily succoured by his fellowes, he had there left his life, ere Don-Quixote would have abandoned his gripe.

The Inkeeper who of force was to assist his fellow in office, forthwith repayred unto his ayde. The Hostesse seeing her husband re-enter into contentions and brabbles, raysed a new cry, whose burden was borne by her daughter and Maritornes, asking succour of heaven and those that were present. Sancho seeing all that passed, said ; By the Lord, all that my Master hath said of the enchantments of this Castle is true ; for it is not possible for a man to live quietly in it one houre together. Don Fernando parted the Trouper, and Don-Quixote, and with the good will of both, unfastned their holds : but yet the Troupers for all this desisted not to require their prisoner, and withall, that they should helpe to get him tyed, and absolutely rendred unto their wils ; for so it was requisite for the King and the Holy Brotherhood, in whose name they did againe demand their helpe and assistance for the arresting of that publik robber and spoyer of people in common pathes and high wayes.

Don-Quixote laughed to heare them speake so idly, as he imagined, and said with very great gravity, Come hither,

CHAPTER
XVIII
Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XVIII

Wherein
are decided
the contro-
versies of the
Helmet of
Mambrinus,
and of the
pannell, with
other strange
and most true
adventures.

you filthie base extractions of the dunghill, dare you terme the loosing of the inchained, the freeing of prisoners, the assisting of the wretched, the raising of such as are falne, and the supplying of those that are in want? Dare you (I say) terme these things robbing on the high way? O infamous brood, worthy for your base and vile conceipt, that heaven should never communicate with you the valour included in the exercise of Chivalry, wee give you to understand the sinne and error wherin you are, by not adoring the very shadow, how much more the assistance of a Knight errant? Come hither O you that be no Troupers, but theevies in troupe, and robbers of high wayes by permission of the Holy brotherhood: Come hither I say, and tell me, who was that jolthead that did subscribe or ratifie a warrant for the attaching of such a knight as I am? Who was he that knowes not how Knights errant are exempted from all Tribunals? and how that their sword is the law, their valour the Bench, and their wils the statutes of their Courts? I say againe, what madman was he that knowes not how that no priviledge of Gentry enjoyes so many preemiences, immunitiess, and exemptions, as that which a Knight errant acquires the day wherein he is dubd, and undertakes the rigorous exercise of armes? What Knight errant did ever pay tribute, subsidie, tallage, carriage, or passage over water? What Taylor ever had money for making his clothes? What Constable ever lodged him in Castle, that made him after to pay for the shot? What King hath not placed him at his owne Table? what Damzell hath not falne in love with him, and permitted him to use her as hee liked? and finally, what Knight errant was there ever, is, or ever shall be in the world, which hath not the courage himselfe alone to give foure hundred blowes with a cudgell to foure hundred troupers, that shall presume to stand before him in hostile manner?

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the
troupers, and the great ferocitie of our good
Knight Don-Quixote, and how he
was enchanted.



HILEST Don-Quixote said this, the Curate laboured to perswade the troupers, how the Knight was distracted, as they themselves might collect by his workes and words, and therefore it would be to no end to prosecute their designe any further, seeing that although they did apprehend and carry him away, hee would be presently delivered againe, as a madman. To this, he that had the warrant made answer, that it concerned him not to determine whether he was mad or no, but onely to obey and execute his superiours commaund; and that he being once prisoner, they might deliver him three hundred times, and if it were their good pleasure: for all that quoth the Curate, you may not carry him with you at this time nor, as I suppose will he suffer himselfe to be taken. To be briefe, the Curate said so much, and Don-Quixote plaid so many mad prankes, as the troupers themselves would have proved greater fooles then he, if they had not manifestly discerned his defect of judgement: and therefore they held it to be the best course to let him alone, yea and to be compounders of peace and amitie betweene Sancho Pança and the Barber, which still continued their most rancorous and deadly contention. Finally they as the officers of Iustice, did mediate the cause, and were arbiters thereof in such sort, as both the parties remained, though not wholly contented, yet in some sort satisfied, for they onely made them exchange their pannels, but not their gyrts or headstals.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers, and the great ferocitie of our good Knight Don Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

As touching Mambrinos helmet, the Curate did unawares to Don-Quixote, give to the Barber eight reals by it, and the Barber gave backe unto him an acquittance of the receipt thereof, and an everlasting release of all actions concerning it. These two discords which were the most principall, and of most consequence, being thus accorded, it onely rested, that three of Don Lewis his servingmen would be content to retурне home, and leave the fourth to accompanie his Master whither Don Fernando pleased to carry him. And as good hap and better fortune had already begun to breake Lances, and facilitate difficulties, in the favour of the Lovers, and worthie persons of the Inne, so did it resolve to proceede forward, and give a prosperous successe unto all: for the servingmen were content to doe whatsoever their master would have them: whereat Donna Clara was so cheerfull, as no one beheld her face in that season, but might read therein the inward contentment of her mind. Zorayda, although she did not verie well understand all the successes of the things she had seene, yet was she interchanegably grieved and cheered according to the shewes made by the rest, but chiefly by her Spanyard; on whom her eyes were alwaies fixed, and all the affects of her mind depended. The Inkeeper, who did not forget the recompence made by the Curate to the Barber, demaunded of him Don-Quixotes expences, and satisfaction for the damage he had done to his wine bags, and the losse of his wine, swearing that neither Rozinante, nor Sancho his Asse should depart out of the Inne, untill he were payed the very last farthing. All was quietly ended by the Curate, and Don Fernando paid the whole summe; although the judge had also most liberally offered to doe it; and all of them remained afterwards in such quietnesse and peace, as the Inne did no longer resemble the discorded campe of Agramante, (as Don-Quixote termed it) but rather enjoyed the very peace and tranquility of the Emperour Octavians time: for all which, the common opinion was, that thanks were justly due to the sincere proceeding and great eloquence of Master Curate, and to the incomparable liberality, and goodnesse of Don Fernando. Don-Quixote, perceiving him-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

selfe free, and delivered from so many difficulties, and brabbles, (wherewith as well he, as his Esquire had beeene perplexed) held it high time to prosecute his commenced voyage, and bring to an end the great adventure unto which he was called and chosen. Therefore with resolute determination to depart, he went and cast himselfe on his knees before Dorotea, who not permitting him to speake untill he arose, he to obey her, stood up, and said. It is a common proverbe, beautifull Ladie, 'That diligence is the Mother of good hap': and in many and grave affaires, experience hath shewed, that the sollicitude and sore of the suiter oft brings a doubtfull matter to a certaine and happy end. But this truth appeares in nothing more cleerely, then in matters of warre; wherein celerity and expedition prevent the enemies dessignes, and obtaine the victory before an adversary can put himselfe in defence: all this I say, high and worthy Ladie, because it seemes to me, that our abode in this Castle is nothing profitable, and many therewithall turne so farre to our hinderance, as we may palpably feele it one day. For who knowes but that your enemie, the Giant hath learned by spies, or other secret intelligence and meanes, how I meane to come and destroy him, and (oportunite favouring his dissinges) that he may have fortified himselfe in some inexpugnable Castle or Fortresse, against the strength whereof neither mine industrie, nor the force of mine invincible arme can much prevale; wherefore, deare Ladie, let us prevent (as I have sayde) by our diligence, and let us presently depart unto the place whereunto we are called by our good fortune, which shall be deferred no longer then I am absent from your highnesse foe. Here he held his peace, and did expect, with great gravitie, the beautifull Princesse answere: who with debonary countenance, and a stile accommodated unto Don-Quixote, returned him this answere. I do gratifie and thanke, Sir Knight, the desire you shew to assist me in this my great neede: which denotes very cleerely the great care you have to favour orphanes and distressed wightes: and I beseech God, that your good desires and mine may bee accomplished, to the end that you may see how there are some thankfull women on earth: as touching

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable ad-venture of the troupers, and the great ferociti of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers, and the great ferocitie of our good Knight Don Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

my departure, let it be forthwith, for I have none other will, then that which is yours ; therefore you may dispose of me at your owne pleasure, for she that hath once committed the defence of her person unto you, and hath put into your hands the restitution of her estate, ought not to seeke to do any other thing then that which your wisedome shall ordaine. In the name of God (quoth Don-Quixote) seeing that your Highnesse doth so humble your selfe unto mee, I will not lose the occasion of exalting it, and installing it againe in the throne of your inheritance. Let our departure be incontinent for my desires, and the way, and that which they call the danger that is in delay, doe spurre me on. And seeing that heaven never created, nor hell ever beheld any man that could affright me, or make a coward of me, go therefore Sancho, and saddle Rozinante, and empannell thine Asse, and make readie the Queenes Palfrey, and let us take leave of the Constable and these other Lords, and depart away from hence instantly.

Then Sancho (who was present at all this) wagging of his head, said : O my Lord, my Lord, how much more Knaverie (be it spoken with the pardon of all honest kercheses) is there in the little village then is talked of ? what ill can there be in any village, or in all the Cities of the world, able to impaire my credit, thou villaine ? If thou be angrie, quoth Sancho, I will hold my tongue, and omit to say that which by the dutie of a good Squire, and of an honest servant I am bound to tell you. Say what thou wilt, quoth Don-Quixote, so thy words be not addrest to make me afraid ; for if thou beest frighted, thou doest onely like thy selfe ; and if I bee devoid of terrour, I also doe that which I ought. It is not that which I meane, quoth Sancho, but that I doe hold for most sure and certaine that this Ladie which cals her selfe Queene of the great Kingdome of Micomicon, is no more a Queene then my mother ; for if she were what she saies, she would not at every corner, and at every turning of a hand be billing as shee is, with one that is in this good company. Dorotea blushed at Sanchos words ; for it was true indeede, that her spouse Don Fernando would now and then privately steale from her lips some part of the reward

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

which his desires did merit, (which Sancho espying, it seemed to him, that that kinde of wanton familiarity was more proper to curtesans, then becomming the Queene of so great a Kingdome) and yet she neither could, nor would reply unto him, but let him continue his speech, as followeth : This I doe say, good my Lord, quoth he, to this end, that if after wee have runne many waies and courses, and indured bad nights and worse daies, he that is in this Inne, sporting himselfe, shall come to gather the fruit of our labours, there is no reason to hasten me thus to saddle Rozinante, or empannell the Asse, or make ready the Palfrey, seeing it would bee better that we stayed still, and that every whoore spunne, and we fell to our victuals.

O God, how great was the fury that inflamed Don-Quixote, when he heard his Squire speake so respectlesly ! I say it was so great, that with a shaking voyce, a faultering tongue, and the fire sparkling out of his eyes, he said, O villanous peasant, rash, unmanerly, ignorant, rude, blasphemous, bold murmurer, and detractor, hast thou presumed to speake such words in my presence, and in that of these noble Ladies ? and hast thou dared to entertaine such rash and dishonest surmises into thy confused imagination ? depart out of my sight thou monster of nature, store-house of untruthes, armorie of falsehood, sincke of roguerie, inventor of villanie, publisher of ravings, and the enemie of that decencie which is to be used towards royall persons. Away villaine, and never appeare before mee, under paine of mine indignation : And saying so, he bended his browes, fild up his cheeke, looked about him on every side, and strucke a great blow with his right foote on the ground ; all manifest tokens of the rage which inwardly fretted him : at which words and furious gestures poore Sancho remained so greatly affrighted, as he could have wished in that instant, that the earth opening under his feete would swallow him up. And knew not what to doe, but turne his backe, and get him out of his Lords most furious presence : but the discrete Dorotea (who was now so well schooled in Don-Quixotes humour) to mitigate his yre, said unto him ; be not offended, good Sir Knight of the sad face, at the idle words which

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable ad-venture of the troupers, and the great ferocitié of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers, and the great ferociti of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

your good Squire hath spoken : for perhaps he hath not said them without some ground, nor of his good understanding and Christian minde can it be suspected, that he would wittingly slander or accuse any body falsely : And therefore we must beleeve, without all doubt, that as in this Castle, as you your selfe have said, Sir Knight, all things are represented, and succeed by maner of enchantment, I say, it might befall, that Sancho may have seene by diabolical illusion, that which he saies, he beheld so much to the prejudice of my reputation. I vow by the omnipotent Iove, quoth Don-Quixote, that your highnes hath hit the very pricke, and that some wicked vision appeared to this sinner, my man Sancho, that made him to see that which otherwise were impossible to be seene by any other way, then that of enchantment : for I know very well, the great goodnesse, and simplicitie of that poore wretch is such, as hee knowes not how to invent a lye on any bodie living. It is even so, and so it shall be quoth Don Fernando : and therefore, good Sir Don-Quixote, you must par~~on~~ him, and reduce him againe to the bosome of your good grace : *Sicut erat in principio*, and before the like visions did distract his sense. Don-Quixote answered, that he did willingly pardon him : and therefore the Curate went for Sancho, who returned very humbly, and kneeling downe on his knees, demaunded his Lords hand, which he gave unto him, and after that hee had permitted him to kisse it, he gave him his blessing, saying. Now thou shalt finally know Sancho, that which I have told thee divers times, how that all the things of this Castle are made by way of inchauntment. So doe I verily beleeve, said Sancho, except that of the Canvassing in the banquet, which really succeeded by an ordinary and naturall way : doe not beleeve that, said Don-Quixote ; for if it were so, I would both then, and also now have taken a dire revenge : but neither then, nor now could I ever see any, on whom I might revenge that thine injurie. All of them desired greatly to know what that accident of the banquet was : And then the Inne-keeper recounted it point by point, the flights that Sancho Pança made : whereat they all did laugh not a little, and Sancho would have beene ashamed no lesse,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

if his Lord had not anew perswaded him, that it was a meere inchauntment: And yet Sanchos madnesse was never so great, as to beleeve that it was not a reall truth, verily befallen him, without any colour, or mixture of fraude, or illusion: but that hee was tossed by persons of flesh, bloud, and bone, and not by dreamed and imagined shadowes or spirits, as his Lord beleeved, and so constantly affirmed.

Two dayes were now expired, when all that Noble company had sojourned in the Inne, and then it seeming unto them high time to depart, they devised how (without putting Dorotea and Don Fernando to the paines, to turne back with Don-Quixote to his Village, under pretence of restoring the Queene Micomicona) the Curate and Barber might carry him backe as they desired, and indeavour to have him cured of his folly in his own house. And their invention was this; they agreed with one, who by chaunce passed by that way with a Teame of Oxen, to carry him in this order following: They made a thing like a Cage of timber, so bigge, as that Don-Quixote might sit, or lye in it at his ease: and presently after, Don Fernando, and his fellowes, with Don Lewis his servants, the Troupers, and the Inkeeper, did all of them, by Master Curates direction cover their faces and disguise themselves, every one as he might best, so that they might seeme to Don-Quixote other people then such as he had seene in the Castle. And this being done, they entred with very great silence into the place where hee slept, and tooke his rest after the related conflicts: and approching him, who slept securely, not fearing any such accident, and laying hold on him very strongly, they tyed his hands and his feete very strongly, so that when hee started out of his sleepe, hee could not stirre himselfe, nor doe any other thing, then admire, and wonder at those strange shapes which he saw standing before him: and presently he fel into the conceipt, which his continuall and distracted imagination had already suggested unto him, beleeving that all those strange figures were the spirits and shaddowes of that inchaunted Castle, and that he himselfe was now without doubt inchaunted, seeing he could neither move nor defend himselfe. All this succeeded just as the

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers, and the great ferocitie of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was inchantment.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XIX

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troupers, and the great ferocities of our good Knight Don-Quixote, and how he was enchanted.

Curate (who plotted the jest) made full account it would. Only Sancho, among all those that were present, was in his right sense and shape; and although hee wanted but little to be sickle of his Lords disease, yet for all that, he knew all those counterfeit ghosts: but hee would not once unfold his lips, untill he might see the end of that surprisall and imprisonment of his Master. Who likewise spoke never a word, but only looked to see what would be the period of his disgrace. Which was, that bringing him to the Cage, they shut him within, and afterwards nailed the barres therof so well, as they could not be easily broken. They presently mounted him upon their shoulders, and as he issued out at the chamber doore, they heard as dreadfull a voice as the Barber could devise, (not he of the pannell, but the other) which said: 'O Knight of the sadde countenance bee not grieved at the imprisonment whereinto thou art led, for so it must bee, that thereby the adventure into which thy great force and valour have thrust thee, may be the more speedily ended; and ended it will be, when the furious Manchegal Lyon, and the white Tobosian Dove shall be united in one, and after they have humbled their lofty Crest unto the soft yoke of wedlocke: from whose wonderfull consort, shall issue to the light of the Orbe, fierce whelps, which shall imitate the raunching pawes of their valorous father, and this shall bee, before the pursuer of the fugitive nymphoe doe with his swift and naturall course make two turnes, in visitation of the glistening Images; And thou, O the most noble, and obedient Squire, that ever had sword at a gyrdle, beard on a face, or dent in a nose, let it not dismay, or discontent thee to see carried away before thy eyes the flower of all Chivalrie errant. For very speedily, if it please the framer of the world, thou shalt see thy selfe so exalted and ennobled, as thou shalt scarce knowe thy selfe: Nor shalt thou bee defrauded of the promises made unto thee by thy noble Lord: and I do assure thee, from the wise Mentironiana, that thy wages shall be payed thee, as thou shalt quickly see in effect: and therefore follow the steps of the valorous and inchaunted Knight; for it is necessary, that thou goe to

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

' the place where you both shall stay : and because I am not
' permitted to say any more, farewell ; for I doe returne I
' well know whither.' Towards the end of this prophecie, he
lifted up his voyce, and afterwards lesned it with so slender
an accent, that even those which were acquainted with the
jest, almost beleeved what they had heard.

Don-Quixote was very much comforted by the prophecie ;
for hee presently apprehended the whole sense thereof, and
perceived how hee was promised in marriage his beloved
Dulcinea of Toboso, from whose happy wombe should sally
the Whelps (which were his sonnes) to the eternall glory
of the Mancha. And beleeving all this most firmly, hee
elevated his voice, and breathing forth a great sigh, thus
said, ' O thou, whatsoever thou beest, which hast prognosti-
' cated so great good to me, I desire thee to request in my
' name, the wiseman who hath charge to record mine acts,
' that he permit me not to perish in this prison (to which
' they now do carry me) before the accomplishment of so
' joyfull and incomparable promises, as now have beeene
' made unto me. For so that this may befall, I will
' account the paines of my prison a glory, and the chaines
' that environ me an ease : and will not esteeme this bed
' whereon I am laid, a hard field of battaile, but a soft
' ticke, and a most fortunate lodging. And as concern-
' ing the consolation of my Squire Sancho Pança, I trust
' in his goodnesse, and honest proceeding, that he will
' not abandon me in good or bad fortune : for though it
' should fall out through his, or my hard hap, that I shall
' not be able to bestow on him an Iland, or other equi-
' valent thing, as I have promised, his wages at least can-
' not be lost, for in my Testament, which is made already, I
' have set downe what he is to have, though not conformably
' to his many good services, yet according to my possibility.'

Sancho Pança bowed his head with great reverence, and
kissed both his hands (for one alone he could not, by
reason they were bound together) and presently those
visions did lift up the cage, and accommo-
date it on the Teame of Oxen.

CHAPTER XIX

In which is
finished the
notable ad-
venture of
the troupers,
and the great
ferocitié of
our good
Knight Don-
Quixote, and
how he was
enchanted.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-
Quixotes inchauntment, with other
famous occurrences.



HEN Don-Quixote saw himselfe to be incaged after that maner, and placed in the Cart he said, I have read many and very grave histories of Knights errant, but I never read, saw, nor heard, that they were wont to carry Knights errant inchaunted after this manner, and with the leisure that those slothfull and heavy beasts doe threaten: for they were ever accustomed to be carried in the ayre with wonderfull speed, shut in some duskie and obscure clowd; or in some fiery chariot; or on som Hippogrifus, or some other such like beast: but that they cary me now on a Teame of Oxen, I protest it drives me into a great amazement, but perhaps both Chivalrie, and the inchauntings of these our times, doe follow a course different from those of former ages: and peradventure it may also bee, that as I am a new Knight in the world, and the first that hath againe revived the now-neglected, and forgotten exercise of armes, so have they also newly invented other kinds of inchauntings, and other manners of carrying away inchaunted Knights. What doest thou think of this Sonne Sancho? I know not, quoth Sancho, what to thinke, because I am not so well seene in Scriptures errant as you are; but for all this I durst affirme and sweare, that these visions which goe up and downe in this place, are not altogether Catholike. Catholikes, my father, quoth Don-Quixote, how can they be Catholikes, when they be all Divels, which have assumed phantasticall bodies to come and put me into this state? And if thou wilt prove the truth hereof, doe but touch and feele them, and thou shalt finde

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

them to have no bodies, but of aire, and that they consist of nothing but an outward appearance. Now by my faith Sir, quoth Sancho, I have already touched them, and finde this Divell that goeth there so busily up and downe, both plump and soft fleshed ; and that hee hath besides another property very different from that which I have heard say Divels have : for it is said, that they smell all of brimstone and other filthy things ; but one may feele at least halfe a league off, the ambar that this Divell smels off. Sancho spoke this of Don Fernando, who belike (as Lords of his ranke are wont) had his attyre perfumed with Ambar.

Marvell not thereat friend Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote, for the divels are very craftie ; and although they bring smels or perfumes about them, yet they themselves smell nothing (because they are spirits) or if they doe smel ought it is not good, but evill and stinking savors : the reason is, for that as they doe alwayes beare wheresoever they be, their hell about them, and can receive no kind of ease of their torments, and good smels bee things that delight and please; it is not possible that they can smell any good thing: and if it seeme to thee, that that divell whom thou dost mention, smels of Amber, either thou art deceived, or he that would deceive thee, by making thee to thinke that he is no divell. All these discourses passed betweene the Master and the man ; the whilst Don Fernando and Cardenio (fearing lest Sancho should finde out the deceit whereto he was already come very neere) resolved to hasten the Knights departure ; and therefore calling the Inkeeper aside, they commaunded him to saddle Rozinante, and empannell Sancho his beast ; which he did with all expedition : and the Curate agreed with the Troupers for so much a day to accompany him unto his Village. Cardenio hanged at the pommell of Rozinantes saddle, the Target on the one side, and on the other the Bason, and by signes commaunded Sancho to get up on his Asse, and leade Rozinante by the bridle ; and afterwards placed on either side of the Cart two Troupers with their firelockes.

But before the Cart departed, the Hostesse, her daughter, and Maritornes came out to bid Don-Quixote farewell, fayn-

CHAPTER
XX

Wherein is
prosecuted
the manner
of Don-
Quixotes in-
chauntment,
with other
famous
occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes enchantment, with other famous occurrences.

ing that they wept for sorrow of his disaster; to whom Don-Quixote said: My good Ladies doe not weepe: for all these mischances are incident to those which professe that which I doe: and if these calamities had not befall me, I would never have accounted my selfe for a famous Knight Errant: for the like chances never happen to Knights of little name or renoune, because there are none in the world that makes any mention of them. But they often befall to the valorous, who have emulators of their vertue and valour, both many Princes and many other Knights that strive by indirect meanes to destroy them. But for all that, vertue is so potent, as by her selfe alone (in despite of all the Nigromancy that ever the first inventor thereof Zoroastes knew) she will come off victorious from every danger, and will shine in the world as the Sunne doth in heaven. Pardon me faire Ladies, if by any carelesnesse I have done you any displeasure, for with my will and knowledge I never wronged any. And pray unto God for me, that hee will please to deliver mee out of this prison, whereinto some ill meaning inchanter hath thrust me; for if I once may see my selfe at liberty againe, I will never forget the favours which you have done me in this Castle, but greatly acknowledge and recompence them as they deserve. Whilst the Ladies of the Castle were thus intertained by Don-Quixote, the Curate and Barber tooke leave of Don Fernando and his companions, of the Captaine and his brother, and of all the contented Ladies, specially of Dorotea and Luscinda; all of them embraced and promised to acquaint one another with their succeeding fortunes: Don Fernando intreating the Curate to write unto him what became of Don-Quixote, assuring him that no affaire he could informe him of should please him better then that, and that he would in lieu thereof acquaint him with all occurrences which he thought would delight him, eyther concerning his owne mariage or Zoraydas baptisme, or the successe of Don Lewis, and Luscindas returne into her house.

The Curate offered willingly to accomplish to a haire all that he had commaunded him: and so they returned once againe to embrace one another, and to renew their mutuall

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

and complementall offers: the Inkeeper came also to the Curate, and gave him certaine papers, saying, that he had found them within one of the linings of the wallet, wherein the Tale of the curious impertinent was had; and that since the owner did not returne to fetch it, he bad him take them all with him: for seeing he could not reade, hee would keepe them no longer. Master Curate yeelded him many thanks; and then opening them, found in the beginning thereof these words: 'The Tale of Riconnette and Cortadillo,' by which he understood that it was some History, and collected that it must be a good one, seeing that of the curious Impertinent, contrived perhaps by the same Authour, had proved so well, and therefore he laid it up, with an intention to reade it as soone as he had oportunity. Then hee mounted on horse-backe with his friend the Barber; and both of them putting on their masks that they might not quickly be knowne by Don-Quixote, they travelled after the teame, which held on in this order; first went the Cart, guided by the Carter: on both sides therof the Troupers rode with their firelockes: then followed Sancho upon his Asse, leading Rozinante by the bridle; and last of all came the Curate and Barber upon their mighty Mules, and with their faces covered: all in a grave gesture, and with an Alderman-like pace, and travelling no faster then the slow steps of the heavie Oxen permitted them. Don-Quixote sate with his hands tyed, his legges stretched out, and leaning against the barre of the Cage, with such a silence, and patience, as he rather seemed a statue then a man. In this quiet and leisurely manner they travelled for the space of two leagues, when arriving to a valley, it seemed to their Conductor a fit place to repose and bait his Oxen. And acquainting the Curate with his purpose, the Barber was of opinion that they should yet goe on a little further, because he knew that there lay behinde a little mountaine, which was within their view, a certaine vale, much better furnished with grasse then that wherein hee meant to abide. The barbers opinion was allowed, and therefore they continued on their travell, when the Curate looking by chance behinde him, saw comming after them

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

sixe or seven men on horse-backe, and very well appointed, who quickly got ground of them ; for they came not the lazie and flegmaticke pace of Oxen, but as men that were mounted on Canona Mules, and pricked forward with a desire to passe over the heat of the day in their Inne, which was not much more then a league from thence. Finally, those diligent travellers overtooke our slouthfull ones, and saluted them courteously, and one of them that was a Canon of Toledo, and Master of the rest, noting the orderly procession of the Cart, Troupers, Sancho, Rozinante, the Curate and Barber, but chiefly the incaged Don-Quixote, hee could not forbear to demand what meanted the carriage of that man, in so strange a manner, although he did already conjecture by observation of the Troupers, that hee was some notable robber or other delinquent, the punishment of whom belonged to the Holy Brotherhood. One of the Troupers, to whom the demaund was made, did answere in this manner : Sir we know not wherefore this Knight is carried in this forme, and therefore let he himselfe, who best may, tell you the reason thereof.

Don-Quixote had over-heard their discourse, and said, if, Gentlemen, you be conversant and skilfull in matters of Chivalry, I will communicate my misfortunes with you : but if you be not, I have no reason to trouble my selfe to recount them. The Curate and Barber seeing the travellers in talke with Don-Quixote, drew neere to make answere for him in such sort, that their invention might not be discovered ; the whilest the Canon replied to the Knight, and said, Truely brother, I am better acquainted with booke of Knighthood, then with Villapandas Logicke : and therefore if all the difficultie rest onely in that, you may safely communicate whatsoever you will with me. A Gods name be it, quoth Don-Quixote : You shall therefore understand Sir Knight, that I am carried away inchantment in this Cage, through the envie and fraud of wicked Magicians, ‘ For vertue is much more persecuted of the wicked, then honoured of the good.’ I am a Knight Errant, but none of those whose names are not recorded in the booke of fame, but one of those who in despite of envie it selfe, and of all the Magicians of Persia,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the Bracmanes of India, or of the Gymnosopists of Aethiopia shall hang his name in the Temple of Eternity, that it may serve as a modell and patterne to insuing ages ; wherein Knights Errant may view the steps which they are to follow, if they meane to aspire to the toppe and honourable height of armes. The Knight Sir Don-Quixote saith true, quoth the Curate, speaking to the travellers, that he is carried away in this Chariot enchanted, not through his owne default or sinnes, but through the malignant treacherie of those, to whom vertue is loathsome, and valour odious. This is good Sir, the Knight of the sad countenance (if you have at any time heard speake of him) whose valorous acts shall remaine insculped in stubborne Brasse, and time-surviving Marble, though Envie and Malice doe labour never so much to obscure them.

When the Canon heard the imprisoned man and the three speake thus in one tenour, hee was about to blesse himselfe for wonder, and could not conjecture what had befallen him, and into no lesse admiration were they brought that came with him. But Sancho Pança having in the meane time approached to heare their speech, to plaister up the matter, added : now Sirs, whether you will love me well or ill, for what I shall say, the very truth of the matter is, that my Lord Don-Quixote is as much inchaunted as my mother, and no more. For his judgement is yet whole and sound ; he eates, and drinke, and doth his necessities as other men doe, and as he himselfe did yesterday, and other daies before they incaged him : all which being so, how can you make me beleieve that he goeth inchaunted ? for I have heard many persons avouch, that inchaunted persons neither eate, nor drinke, nor speake, and yet my Lord, if hee be not thwarted, will talke more then twentie barresters : and then turning towards the Curate, he said : O Mr. Curate, Mr. Curate, doe you think that I doe not know you ? And think you that I doe not suppose, yea and presage whereto these new inchaunments are addressed ? well know then, that I know you well, although you cover your face never so much, and that I understand your meaning, how deepeley soever you smother your drifts : but in fine, where emulation and envy raignes,

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes in-chauntment, with other famous occurrences.

verte cannot live ; where pinching swayes, liberalitie goes by. A pox take the Divell : for but for your reverence my Lord had ere this time beene wedded to the Princesse Micomicona, and I my selfe had beene created an earle at least, for no lesse might be expected either from the bountie of my Lord, or the greatnessse of my deserts : but now I perceive that to bee true, which is commonly said, ‘That the wheele of Fortune turns about more swiftly, then that of a mil : and that they which were yesterday on the top therof, lye to day all along on the ground.’ I am chiefly grieved for my wife and children ; for whereas they ought and might hope to see their father come in at his gates, made a Gouvernour, or Viceroy of some Ile, or Kingdome, they shall now see him returne unto them no better then a poore horse-boy. All which I have urged so much, Mr. Curate, onely to intimate to your paternitie, how you ought to have remorse, and make a scruple of conscience, of treating my deare Lord as you do, and looke to it well, that God doe not one day demaund at your hands, in the other life, amends for the prison whereinto you carry him ; and that you bee not answerable for all the succours and good deedes, which hee would have afforded the world in this time of his captivitie. Snuffe me those candles, quoth the Barber, hearing him speake so : what Sancho, art thou also of thy Masters confraternitie ? I sweare by the Lord, I beginne to see that thou art very like to keepe him company in the Cage, and that thou shalt bee as deepeley inchaunted as hee, for the portion which thou hast of his humour, and Chivalrie. Thou wast in an ill houre begotten with child by his promises, and in a worse did the Isle, which thou so greatly longest for, sinke into thy paté : I am not with childe by any body, said Sancho, nor am I a man of humour to let any body get me with child, no though it were the King himselfe : and although I be poore, yet am I a Christian, and owe nothing to any one ; and if I desire Islands, others there are that desire worse things, ‘and every one is the sonne of his owne workes ’: and under the name of a man, I may become Pope, how much more the Gouvernour of an Island ; and chiefly seeing my Lord may gaine so many as hee may want men to bestow them on, and there-

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

fore, Mr. Barber, you should take heede how you speake ; for all consists not in trimming of beards : and there is some difference betweene Peter and Peter. I say it because all of us know one another, and no man shall unperceived put a false Die upon mee. As concerning my Lords enchantment, God knowes the truth, and therefore let it rest as it is, seeing it is the worse for the stirring in. The Barber would not reply unto Sancho, lest that with his simplicities, hee should discover what the Curate and himselfe did labour so much to conceale, and the Curate doubting the same, had intreated the Canon to prick on a little forward, and he would unfold to him the mysterie of the encaged Knight, with other matters of delight. The Canon did so, and taking his men along with them, was very attentive to all that he rehearsed, of the condition, life, madnesse, and fashions of Don-Quixote. There did he briefly acquaint him with the originall cause of his distraction, and all the progresse of his adventures, untill his shutting up in that cage : and their owne designe in carrying home to his Countrey, to trie whether they might by any meanes finde out a remedy for his frensie. The Canon and his men againe admired to heare so strange a Historie as that of Don-Quixote, and as soone as the Curate had ended his relation, the Canon said.

Verily Master Curate I doe finde by experience, that those bookees which are instituted of Chivalrie, or Knighthood, are very prejudiciale to welgoverned commonwealths : and although (borne away by an idle and curious desire) I have read the beginning of almost as many as are imprinted, of that subject, yet could I never indure my selfe to finish and reade any one of them through : for me thinks that somewhat more or lesse, they all import one thing, and this hath no more then that, nor the other more then his fellow. And in mine opinion this kinde of writing and invention falleth within the compasse of the fables called *Milesiae*, which are wandering and idle tales, whose onely scope is delight, and not instruction ; quite contrary to the project of those called *Fabulae Apologie*, which delight and instruct together. And though that the principall ende of such bookees be recreation, yet cannot I perceive

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

how they can yeeld it, seeing they bee forced with so many, and so proportionlesse untruthes. For the delight that the mind conceives, must proceed from the beautie, and conformitie which it sees or contemplates in such things as the sight, or imagination represents unto it; and all things that are deformed or discordant, must produce the contrary effect. Now then what beautie can there be, or what proportion betweene the parts and the whole, or the whole and the parts, in a booke or fable, wherein a youth of sixteene yeares of age gives a blow to a Giant as great as a Iewes, and with that blow devides him in two as easily as if he were a pellet of Sugar? And when they describe a battell, after that they have tolde us how there were at least a million of men on the adverse side, yet if the Knight of the booke be against them, wee must of force, and whether we will or no, understand, that the said Knight obtained the victory through the invincible strength of his arme? what then shall we say of the facilitie wherewithall the Inheritrix of a Kingdome, or Empyre falls betweene the armes of one of those errant and unknowne knights? what understanding, if it be not altogether barren or barbarous, can delight it selfe, reading how a great tower full of knights doth passe through the Sea as fast as a ship with the most prosperous wind? And that going to bed a man is in Lombardie, and the next morning findes himselfe in Prester Iohns countrey, among the Indians, or in some other Region which never was discovered by Ptolomeus, nor seene by Marcus Polus? and if I should be answered, that the inventors of such bookes do write them as fables: and therefore are not bound unto any respect of circumstances, or observation of truth, I would reply, that an untruth is so much the more pleasing, by how much the neerer it resembles a truth; and so much the more gratefull, by how much the more it is doubtfull and possible: for lying fables must bee suited unto the readers understanding, and so written, as that facilitating impossible things, levelling untrue things, and holding the mind in suspence, they may ravish a more delight, and entertaine such manners, as pleasure and wonder may step by step walke together: all which things hee that

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

writes not likelihoods, shall never be able to perforne. And as touching Imitation (wherein consistes the perfection of that which is written) I have not seene in any bookee of Knighthoode, an entire bulke of a fable, so proportioned in all the members thereof, as that the middle may answere the beginning, and the end the beginning and middle. But rather they have composed them of so many members, as it more probably seems, that the authors intended to frame Chimerae or monsters, then to deliver proportionate figures, most harsh in their stile, incredible in exploits, impudent in love matters, absurd in complements, prolix in battels, fond in discourses, uncertaine and senselesse in voyages, and finally, devoide of all discretion, art and ingenious disposition. And therefore they deserve (as most idle and frivilous things) to be banished out of all Christian commonwealthes.

Master Curate did listen to the Canon with very great attention; and he seemed unto him to be a man of good understanding, and that he had great reason for what hee had alledged: and therefore said, that in respect they did concurre in opinions, and that he had an old grudge to the vanity of such Bookes, he had likewise fired all Don-Quixotes library, consisting of many bookes of that subject: And then he recounted to him the search and inquisition hee had made of them; and which he had condemned, and which reserved: whereat the Canon laughed heartily, and said, that notwithstanding all the evill he had spoken of such bookes, yet did he find one good in them, to wit, the subject they offered a good wit to worke upon, and shew it selfe in them; for they displayed a large and open plaine, thorow which the Pen might runne without let or incumbrances; describing of shipwracks, tempests, encounters, and battels: delineating a valorous Captaine, with all the properties required in him; as wisedome to frustrate the designes of his enemie; eloquence to perswade or disswade his souldiers; ripenesse in advice; promptnesse in execution; as much valour in attending, as in assaulting of an enemie. Deciphering now a lamentable and tragicall successe, then a joyfull and unexpected event; there a most beautifull, honest, and discretee Ladie, heere a valiant,

CHAPTER

XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XX

Wherein is prosecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes in-chauntment, with other famous occurrences.

courteous, and Christian Knight, there an unmeasurable barbarous braggard; heere a gentle, valorous, and wise Prince: Representing the goodnesse and loyalty of subjects, the magnificence and bountie of Lords: Sometimes he may shew himselfe an Astrologian, sometimes a Cosmographer, sometimes a Musitian, sometimes a Statist, and sometimes, if he please, he may have occasion to shew himselfe a Nigromancer: There may he demonstrate the subtillie of Vlisses, the pietie of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the treachery of Sinon, the amitie of Eurialus, the liberality of Alexander, the resolution of Cæsar, the clemency and truth of Trajanus, the fidelitie of Zopirus, the prudence of Cato; and finally, all those parts that make a worthy man perfect: one whiles by placing them all in one subject; another by distributing them among many: and this being done, and set out in a pleasing stile, and a wittie fashion that approacheth as neere as is possible unto the truth, will questionlesse remaine a worke of many faire draughts, which being accomplished, will represent such beauty and perfection, as shall fully attaine to the best end aymed at in all writing, that is, as I have said, joyntly to instruct, and delight: for the irregularity, and liberality of those bookees gives to the Author, the meanes to shew himselfe an Epicke, Lyricke, Tragedian, and Comedian; with all other things which the most gracefull and pleasant sciences of Poetry and Oratorie include in themselves. For the Epickes may be as well written in prose as in verse.

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the Canon prosecutes his discourse upon
bookes of Chivalrie, and many other
thinges worthy of his wit.



OU say very true, quoth the Curate; and for this very reason are they, which have hitherto invented such bookea, the more worthy of reprehension, because they neither heeded the good discourse, the arte, nor the rules, by which they might have guided themselves, and by that meanes have growne as famous for their prose, as be the two Princes of the Greeke and Latin Poetrie for their verse. I have for my part, quoth the Canon, at least attempted to write a booke of Chivalrie, observing therein all the points by me mentioned; and in truth I have written above a hundred sheetes thereof: and to the end that I might trie whether they were correspondent to my estimation, I did communicate them, both with certaine skilfull and wise men, that are marvailously affected to that subject, and with some ignorant persons that only delight to heare fanaticall inventions; and I have found in them all a gratefull approbation of my labours: yet would I not for all that, prosecute the worke, as well because it seemed unfit for my profession, as also because I finde the number of the ignorant to exceede that of the judicious: and though more good come to a man by the praise of a few wisemen, then hurt by the scoffes of a number of fooles, yet would I not willingly subject my selfe to the confused judgement of the senselesse vulgar, who commonly give themselves most unto the reading of such bookes. But that which most of all rid my hands, yea and my memorie, of all desire to end it, was this argument, drawne from our moderne Comedies, and thus made to my selfe: If those,

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIR.

CHAPTER

XXI

Wherein the
Canon pro-
secutes his
discourse
upon bookees
of Chivalrie,
and many
other thinges
worthy of
his wit.

(as well the fictions, as historical ones) are all or the most part of them notorious fopperies, and things without either head or foote, and yet are by the vulgar heard with such delight, and held and approved for good: and both the Authors that compose them, and actors that represent them, say, that they must be such as they be for to please the peoples humors, and not more conformable to reason or truth, and that, because those wherein Decorum is observed, and the fable followed according to the rules of Art, serve onely for three or foure discrete men (If so many may be found at a Play) which doe attend unto them, and all the rest of the Auditours remaine fasting, by reason they cannot conceive the artificiall contexture thereof; therefore is it better for them to gaine good money and meanes by many, then bare opinion or applause by a few. The very same would be the end of my Booke after I had used all possible industrie to observe the aforesaid precept; and I should remaine onely for a neede, and as the Taylour that dwels in a corner, without trade or estimation.

And although I have sundry times indevoured to perswade the Players, that their opinion was erronious herein, and that they would attract more people and acquire greater fame by acting artificiall Comedies then those irregular, and methodicall Playes then used: yet are they so wedded to their opinion, as no reason can woe, nor demonstration winne them from it. I remember how dealing upon a day with one of those obstinate fellowes, I said unto him: doe not you remember how a few yeeres agoe were represented in Spaine three Tragedies, written by a famous Poet of our Kingdome, which were such as delighted, yea and amazed all the auditours, as well the learned as the simple, the exact as the sleight ones; and that the Players got more by those three alone, then by thirtie of the best that were penned, or Acted since that time? You meane without question, quoth the Actor answering me, *Isabella*, *Filis*, and *Alexandra*. The very same quoth I; and note whether in them were not rightly observed all the rules and precepts of Art: and yet thereby

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

they neither wanted any part of their dignitie, nor the approbation of all the world. So that I inferre, the fault not to be in the vulgar that covets idle toyes, but rather in those which know not how to penne or act any other thing, for no such fond stiffe was in the Comedie of *Ingratitude revenged*, nor found in *Numantia*, nor perceived in that of the *Amorous Merchant*, and much lesse in the *Favourable enemy*, nor in some others made by judicious Poets, which both redounded to their infinite fame and renowne, and yelded unto these Actors abundant gaine. To these I added other reasons, wherewith I left him, in mine opinion, somewhat perplexed, but not satisfied, or desirous to forgoe his erronius opinion.

Truely, M. Canon, quoth the Curate, you have touched a matter that hath roused an ancient rancour and heart-burning of mine against the Comedies now in request; the which is equall to the grudge that I beare to Bookes of Knight-hood. For seeing the Comedie as Tully affirmes, ought to be a mirrour of mans life, a patterne of manners, and an Image of truth: Those that are now exhibited, are mirrours of vanitie, patternes of folly, and Images of voluptuousnesse. For what greater absurditie can be in such a subject, then to see a child come out, in the first Scene of the first Act, in his swadling cloutes, and issue in the second already growne a man, yea a bearded man? And what greater vanitie then to present before us, a valiant old man, and a young coward? A Lay man become a Divine? a Page a Counsellor, a King a Scoundrell, and a Princesse, a scowre-kettle? What should I say, of the little care had of the due observation of time, for the succeeding of that they represent, other then that I my selfe have seene Comedies, whose first Act began in Europe, the second in Asia, and the third ended in Africa, and truely if there had beene a fourth it would questionlesse have finished in America, and by consequence we should have seene a round walke about the foure parts of the world. And fayning an exploit performed in the time of King Pepin, or of Charlemaine, they make the principall Actors thereof, either Heraclius the Emperour

CHAPTER

XXI

Wherein the
Canon pro-
secutes his
discourse
upon booke
of Chivalrie,
and many
other things
worthy of
his wit.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the
Canon pro-
secutes his
discourse
upon bookees
of Chivalrie,
and many
other thinges
worthy of
his wit.

that entred into Hierusalem bearing of the holy Crosse ; or Godfrey of Bulloin that recovered the Holy-land ; Many yeeres, yea and ages having occurred betweene the times of the one and the other : yea and the Comedie being grounded on a fiction, to attribute unto it the verities of a Historie, and mingle it and patch it up, with peeces of others, having relation to different persons and times ; and this with no plausible invention, or draught resembling the truth, but rather with palpable, grosse, and inexcusible errours. And which is worse, some guls are found to affirme, that all perfection consists herein, and that they are too daintie that look for any other.

Now, if wee would passe further to examine the divine Comedies that treate of God, or the lives of Saints, what a multitude of false miracles doe the composers devise ? what a bulke of matters Apocriphall, and ill-understood ? attributing to one Saint the miracles done by another : yea and in humane Comedies they presume to doe miracles (without farther respect, or consideration, but that such a miracle or shew, as they terme it, would doe well in such a place) to the end that the ignorant folke may admire them, and come the more willingly to them : all which doth prejudice truth, discredit histories, and turne to the disgrace of our Spanish wits : for strangers, which doe with much punctualitie observe the method of Comedies, hold us to be rude and ignorant, when they see such follies, and absurdities escape us : and it will be no sufficient excuse for this errorre, to say, that the principall end of well-governed Commonwealths, in the permitting of Comedies, is only to entertain the Comunaltie with some honest pastime, and thereby divert the exorbitant and vicious humours which idlenesse is wont to ingender : and seeing that this end is attained to by whatsoever Comedies good or bad, it were to no purpose to appoint any lawes, or limits unto them ; or to tie the composers to frame, or Actors to play them, as they should doe : For hereunto I answere, that this end would without all comparison be compassed, better by good Comedies then by evill

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

ones: for the auditour, having heard an artificiall and well ordered Comedie, would come away delighted with the jests, and instructed by the truths thereof: wondering at the successes, grow discreeter by the reasons, warned by the deceits, become wise by others example, incensed against vice, and enamoured of vertue; al which affects a good Comedie should stirre up in the hearers minde, were hee never so grosse or clownish: And it is of all impossibilities the most impossible, that a Comedie consisting of all these parts, should not entertaine, delight, satisfie, and content the mind much more, then another that should be defective in any of them, as most of our now-a-day Comedies bee. Nor are the Poets that pen them chiefly to be blamed for this abuse: for some of them know very well where the errour lurkes, and know also as well how to redresse it. But because that Comedies are become a vendible merchandize, they affirme, and therein tell the plaine truth, that the players would not buy them, if they were of any other, then the accustomed kinde; and therefore the Poet indeavours to accomodate himselfe to the humor of the Player, who is to pay him for his labour, and that this is the truth, may be gathered by an infinite number of Comedies, which a most happy wit of this Kingdome hath composed with such delicacy, so many good jests, so elegant a verse, so excellent reasons, so grave sentences, and finally with so much eloquence, and such a loftinesse of stile, as hee hath filled the world with his fame: and yet by reason that hee was forced to accomodate himselfe to the Actors, all of them have not arrived to the height of perfection which Arte requires. Others there are that write without any judgement, and with so little heed of what they do, as after their workes have once beene acted, the Players are constrained to run away and hide themselves, fearing to be punished, as often they have beene, for acting things obnoxious to the Prince, or scandalous to some Families.

All which inconveniences might be redressed, if there were some understanding and discreet person ordained at

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the Canon prosecutes his discourse upon bookees of Chivalrie, and many other thinges worthy of his wit.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the
Canon pro-
secutes his
discourse
upon booke
of Chivalrie,
and many
other thinges
worthy of
his wit.

the Court, to examine all Comedies before they were acted, and that not only such as were played at the Court it selfe, but also all others that were to be acted throughout Spaine, without whose allowance, under his hand and seale, the Magistrate of no Towne should permit any Comedie to bee played: By which meanes the players would diligently send their plaiers to the Court, and might boldly afterwards act them, and the composers would with more care and studie examine their labours, knowing that they should passe the strict censure of him that could understand them: and by this meanes would good Comedies be written, and the thing intended by them, most easily attained to, viz. the entertainement of the people, the good opinion of Spanish wits, the profit and securitie of the Players, and the saving of the care that is now imployed in chasting their rashnesse. And if the same charge were given to this man, or to some other, to examine the bookees of Knighthood, which should bee made hereafter, some of them doubtlesse would be put forth adorned with that perfection whereof you spoke but now: enriching our language with the pleasing and pretious treasure of eloquence, and being an occasion that the old bookees would become obscure in the bright presence of those new ones published, for the honest recreation, not only of the idler sort, but also of those that have more serious occupations. For it is not possible for the bow to continue still bent: nor can our humane and fraile nature sustaine it selfe long, without some helpe of lawfull recreation.

The Canon and Curate had arrived to this point of their discourse, when the Barber spurring on, and overtaking them, said to the Curate, this is the place I lately told you, was fit to passe over the heate of the day in, while the Oxen baited amidst the fresh and abundant Pastures: it likes me very well, quoth the Curate: and telling the Canon what he meant to doe, he also was pleased to remaine with them, as well invited by the prospect of a beautifull valley, which offered it selfe to their view, as also to injoy the Curates conversation, towards whom he began to beare marvailous affection: and lastly with

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

the desire hee had to bee throughly acquainted with Don-
Quixotes adventures, therefore he gave order to some of
his men, that they should ride to the Inne, which was
hard by, and bring from thence what meate they could
finde sufficient to satisfie them all, because he likewise
meant to passe the hot time of the day in that place:
to which one of his men did answere, that their sumpture
Mule was by that time, as he thought, in the Inne, so
copiously furnished with provision of meate, that as he
supposed, they needed not buy any thing there, but barley
for their Mules: if it bee so, quoth the Canon, let our
Mules be carryed thither, and the sumpture one returned
hither.

Whilest this passed, Sancho being free from the continual presence of the Curate and Barber, whom he held as suspected persons, thought it a fit time to speake with his Lord, and therefore drew neere to the cage wherein he sate, and said to him in this manner. Sir, that I may discharge my conscience, I will reveale unto you all that hath past in this affaire of your inchauntment: which briefly is, that those two which ride with their faces covered, are the Curate of our Village and the Barber, and as I imagine they both are the plotters of this your kinde of carrying away, for mcere emulation that they see you surpassee them both in atchieving of famous acts. This truth being presupposed, it followes, that you are not inchaunted, but bee gulled and made a foole. For the proofof whereof I will but demaund of you one question, and if you doe answere me according to mine expectation, as I beleeve you will, you shall feele the deceipt with your owne hands, and perceive how you are not inchaunted, but rather have your wits turned upside-downe. Sonn Sancho demaund what thou wilt, quoth Don-Quixote, and I will satisfie thee, and answere directly to thy desire: But as touching thy averment, that those which goe along with us, be the Curate and Barber, our Gossips, and old acquaintance; it may well befall that they seeme to bee such; but that they are so really, and in effect, I would not have thee beleieve in any manner. For that which thou art to beleieve, and shouldest under-

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the
Canon pro-
secutes his
discourse
upon booke
of Chivalrie,
and many
other things
worthy of
his wit.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the Canon prosecutes his discourse upon bookeſ of Chivalrie, and many other thinges worthy of his wit.

stand in this matter is, that if they be like those our friends as thou sayest, it must needs be that those which have inchaunted mee, have assumed their semblance and likeſſe (for it is an easie thing for Magicians to put on any ſhape they please) thereby to give thee occaſion to thinke that which thou doest, to drive thee into ſuch a labyrinth of imaginations, as thou ſhalt not afterwards know how to ſallie out, although thou hadſt the assistance of Theseus clew: and withall to make me waver in mine understanding, to the end I may not conjecture from whence this charme is derived unto me: for if thou on the one ſide doest affirme, that the Barber, and Curate of our Village doe accompany me; and I on the other ſide finde my ſelfe incaged, and am ſo assured of mine owne force, that no humane strength bee it not ſupernaturall, is able thus to incage me, what wouldest thou have mee ſay, or thinke, but that the manner of mine inchantment exceeds as many as ever I read throughout all the Histories, in-treating of Knights Errant, which have beene inchaunted. Wherefore thou maiest very well appease, and quiet thy ſelfe in that point of beleeving them to bee those thou ſaift; for they are those as much, as I am a Turke: and as touching thy desire to demaund ſomewhat of me, ſpeak, for I will anſwere thee, although thou puttest mee questions till to morrow morning.

Our Ladie assist me quoth Sancho (as loude as he could) and is it poſſible that you are ſo brainsicke, and hard headed, as you cannot perceive that I affirme the very pure truth, and that malice hath a greater stroake in this your disgrace, and imploymēnt, then any inchantments? But ſeeing it is ſo, I will proove evidently that you are not inchaunted: if not, tell me, as God shall deliver you out of this tempeſt, and as you ſhall ſee your ſelfe, when you leaſt thinke of it, in my Ladie Dulcineas armes: make an end of conjuring mee, ſaid Don-Quixote, and aske me what question thou wilt; for I have already told thee that I will anſwere with all punctuality: that is it I demaund quoth Sancho; and the thing I would know is, that you tell me without adding or diminuſhing ought,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

but with all truth used or looked for of all those which professe the exercise of armes as you do, under the title of Knights Errants? I say answered Don-Quixote, that I will not lie a jot: make therefore a beginning, or an ende of these demaunds, for in good sooth thou dost weary me with so many salutations, petitions and preventions. Sancho replied, I say that I am secure of the bountie and truth of my Lord: and therefore, because it makes to the purpose in our affaire, I doe with all respect demaund, whether your worship, since your incagement, and as you imagine enchantment in that coope, have not had a desire to make greater or lesse water, as men are wont to say. I doe not understand good Sancho, that phrase of making water: and therefore explicate thy selfe if thou wouldest have me to answeare thee directly; and is it possible, replied he, that your worship understands not what it is to make great or little waters? then goe to some schoole, and learne it of the boyes, and know that I would say, have you had a desire to doe that which cannot be undone? O, now, now, I understand thee Sancho; yes, verie many times, yea and even now I have, wherefore, I pray thee, deliver mee from the extremitie thereof; for I promise thee I am not altogether so cleane as I would be.

CHAPTER XXI

Wherein the Canon prosecutes his discourse upon bookees of Chivalrie, and many other thinges worthy of his wit.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein the discrete discourse that passed
betweene Sancho Pança, and his Lord
Don-Quixote, is expressed.



A, quoth Sancho, have I caught you at last? this is that which I desired to know, as much as my soule or life. Come now, Sir, and tell me, can you denie that which is wont to be said, when a bodie is ill disposed, I know not what ayles such a one; for hee neither eates nor drinke, nor sleepes, nor answeres directly to that which is demaunded him, so as it seemes that he is incharted? by which may be collected, that such as neither eate, drinke, sleepes, nor do the other naturall things you wote of are incharted: but not those which have a desire as you have, and eate meate, when they get it, and drinke drinke when it is given them, and answere to all that is propounded unto them. Thou sayest true Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote: but I have told thee alreadie, that there are divers sorts of inchantments, and perhaps they change with the times from one kinde into another; and that now the incharted use to doe all that which I doe, although they did not so in times past; and therefore there is no disputing, or drawing of conclusions against the customes of the time. I know, and doe verily perswade my selfe, that I am incharted, and that is sufficient for the discharge of my conscience, which would be greatly burdened if I thought that I were not incharted, and yet permitted my selfe to be borne away in this Cage idly, and like a coward withholding the succour I might give to many distressed and needie persons, which even at this houre be like enough to have extreme want of mine aide, and assistance. Yet say I notwithstanding replied Sancho, that for more abundant satisfaction, your worship

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

might doe wel to attempt the getting out of this prison, the which I do oblige my selfe with all my power to facilitate, yea and to get you out, and then you may recount eftsoons on the good Rozinante, who also seemes enchanted, so sad and melancholy he goes: And this being done, we may againe assay the fortune of seeking adventures, which if it have no good successe, we have time enough to returne to our Cage; wherein I promise, by the faith of a good and loyall Squire, to shut up my selfe together with you, if you shall prove so unfortunate, or I so foolish, as not to bring our designes to a good issue. I am content to doe what thou sayest, brother Sancho, replied Don-Quixote, and when thou seest oportunity offered to free me, I will be rated by thee in every thing, but yet thou shalt see, how far thou art overwrought in the knowledge thou wilt seeme to have of my disgrace.

The Knight Errant, and the ill errant Squire beguiled the time in these discourses, untill they arrived unto the place where the Canon, Curate, and Barber expected them: and then Sancho allighting, and helping to take downe the Cage, the waineman unyoaked his Oxen, permitting them to take the benefit of pasture in that greene and pleasant valley, whose verder invited not such to injoy it as were enchanted like Don-Quixote, but rather such heedfull and discrete persons as was his man, who intreated the Curate to licence his Lord to come out but a little while, for otherwise the prison would not be so cleanly as the presence of so worthie a Knight as his Lord was required. The Curate understood his meaning, and answered that he would satisfie his request very willingly, but that hee feared that when he saw himselfe at liberty, he would play then some pranke or other, and goe whither no bodie should ever set eye on him after: I will be his surety that he shall not flie away, quoth Sancho: and I also, quoth the Canon, if he wil but promise mee, as he is a knight, that he will not depart from us without our consent. I give my word that I will not, said Don-Quixote (who heard all that they had said) and the rather, because that enchanted bodies have not freewill to dispose of themselves as they list; for he that enchanted

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Panca, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Pança, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

them, may make them unable to stirre from one place in three daies: and if they make an escape, he can compell them to returne flying: and therefore since it was so, they might securely set him at liberty, especially seeing that it would redound so much to all their benefits: for if they did not free him, or get further off, he protested that he could not forbear to offend their noses. The Canon tooke his hand (although it were bound) and by his faith, and word, that he would not depart, and then they gave him liberty; whereat he infinitely rejoiced, especially seeing himselfe out of the Cage. The first thing that he did after was to stretch all his bodie, and then he went towards Rozinante, and striking him twice or thrice on the buttocks, he said: I hope yet in God, and his blessed mother, O flower and mirrour of horses, that wee two shall see our selves very soone in that state which our hearts desire; thou with thy Lord on thy backe, and I mounted on thee, and exercising the function for which God sent mee into this world. And saying so, Don-Quixote with his Squire Sancho, retired himselfe somewhat from the companie, and came backe soone after a little more lightned, but greatly desiring to execute his Squires designes.

The Canon beheld him very earnestly, and with admiration wondering to see the strangenesse of his fond humour, and how that he shewed, in whatsoever he uttered, a very good understanding, and onely left the stirrops (as is said before) when any mention was made of Chivalrie; and therefore mooved to compassion, after they were all laide downe along upon the grasse, expecting their dinner, hee said unto him: Gentleman, is it possible that the idle and unsavourie lecture of Bookes of Knighthood, hath so much distracted your wit, as thus to beleeve, that you are caried away enchanted, with other things of that kind, as much wide from truth, as untruths can be from veritie it selfe? Or how is it possible that any humaine understanding can frame it selfe to beleeve, that in this world there have beeene such an infinitie of Amadises, such a crew of famous Knights, so many Emperours of Trapisonda, such a number of Felix-martes of Hyrcania; so many Palfrayes, Damzels Errant,

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Serpents, Robbers, Giants, Battailes, unheard of adventures, sundrie kinds of inchantments, such unmeasurable encounters, such braverie of apparell, such a multitude of enamoured and valiant Princesses, so many Squires, Earles, wittie Dwarfes, Viragoes, Love letters, amorous dalliances ; and finally, so many, so unreasonable, and impossible adventures, as are contained in the Bookes of Knighthood. Thus much I dare avouch of my selfe, that when I read them as long as I doe not thinke that they are all but toyes and untruthes, they delight me : but when I ponder seriously, what they are, I throw the very best of them against the wals, yea, and would throw them into the fire if they were neere me, or in my hands. Having well deserved that severitie, as false Impostures, and seducers of common sence ; as broachers of new Sects, and of uncouth courses of life ; as those that give occasion to the ignorant vulgar to beleeve in such exorbitant untruthes as are contained in them. Yea, and are withall so presumptuous, as to dare to confound the wits of the most discrete, and best discended Gentlemen ; as we may clearely perceive by that they have done to your selfe, whom they have brought to such termes as it is necessarie to shut you up in a Cage, and carie you on a Teame of Oxen, even as one carries a Lion or Tygre from place to place, to gaine a living by the shewing of him. Therefore, good Don-Quixote, take compassion of your selfe, and returne into the bosome of discretion ; and learne to imploy the most happie talent of understanding, and abundance of wit, wherewith bountifull heaven hath inriched you, [in] yet some other course of studie, which may redound to the profit of your soule, and advancement of your credit and estate. And if, borne away by your naturall disposition, you will yet persist in the reading of warlike, and Knightly discourses ; Reade in the holy Scripture the Acts of Judges : for there you shall finde surpassing feates and deeds, as true, as valorous. Portugall had a Viriate. Rome a Cæsar. Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile an Earl Fernan Gonçalez, Valencia a Cid, Andaluzia a Gonçalo Fernandez, Estremadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes, Xerez a Garci Perez de Vargas, Toledo

CHAPTER
XXII
Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Panca, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Pança, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

a Garcí Lasso : Sivil a Don Manuel de Leon. The discourses of whose valorous Actes, may entertaine, teach, delight, and make wonder, the most sublime wit that shall reade them. Yea, this were indeed a studie fit for your sharpe understanding, my deere Sir Don-Quixote, for by this you should become learned in Histories, enamoured of vertue, instructed in goodnesse, bettered in manners, valiant without rashnesse, bold without cowardice: and all this to Gods honour, your owne profit, and renowme of the Mancha, from whence, as I have learned, you deduce your beginning and progenie.

Don-Quixote listned with all attention unto the Canons admonition, and perceiving that he was come to an end of them, after he had looked upon him a good while, he said, me thinkes Gentleman, that the scope of your discourse hath beene addrest to perswade me, that there never were any Knights Errant in the world; and that all the bookees of Chivalrie are false, lying, hurtfull, and unprofitable to the Common-wealth; and that I have done ill to reade them, worse to beleeve in them, and worst of all to follow them, by having thus taken on mee the most austere profession of wandring Knighthood, whereof they intreate: denying moreover that there were ever any Amadises, either of Gaule or Greece; or any of all the other Knights, wherewith such Bookes are stufed; All is just as you have said, quoth the Canon: whereto Don-Quixote replied thus, You also added, that such Bookes had done me much hurt, seeing they had turned my judgement, and immured me up in this Cage; and that it were better for me, to make some amendment, and alter my studie, reading other that are more authenticall, and delight and instruct much better. It is very true answered the Canon. Why then, quoth Don-Quixote, I finde by mine accounts, that the enchanted, and senslesse man is your selfe; seeing you have bent your selfe to speake so many blasphemies against a thing so true, so currant, and of such request in the world, as hee that should denie it, as you doe, merites the same punishment, which as you say you give to those Bookes, when the reading thereof offends you: For to goe about to make men beleieve, that Amadis never lived, nor

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

any other of those Knights, wherewith Histories are fully replenished, would bee none other then to perswade them, that the Sunne lightens not, the Earth sustaines not, nor the Ice makes any thing cold. See what witte is there in the world so profound, that can induce another to beleeve, that the Historie of Guy of Burgundy, and the Princes Floripes, was not true? Nor that of Fierabras, with the Bridge of Mantible, which befell in Charlemaines time, and is, I sweare, as true, as that it is day at this instant; and if it be a lie, so must it bee also, that ever there was an Hector, Achilles, or the warre of Troy; The Twelve Peeres of France, or King Arthur of Brittaine, who goes yet about the world in the shape of a Crow, and is every foote expected in his Kingdome. And they will as well presume to say, that the Historie of Guarino Mezquino, and of the quest of the holy Sangriall be lies; and that for the love betweene Sir Tristram and La Belle Ysonde, and betweene Queene Guenevor and Sir Launcelot Dulak, we have no sufficient Authoritie, and yet there bee certaine persons alive, which almost remember, that they have seene the Ladie Quintaniona, who was one of the best skinkers of Wine that ever Great Brittaine had; and this is so certaine, as I remember, that one of my Grandmothers of my Fathers side, was wont to say unto me, when shee saw any matrone, with a long and reverend kerchiefe or vaile, my boy, that woman resembles very much Lady Quintaniona, from which I argue, that either she knew her her selfe, or at the least, had seene some portraiture of hers. Who can moreover denie the certaintie of the Historie of Peter of Provaunce, and the beautifull Magolona, seeing that untill this very day one may behold in the Kings Armorie, the Pinne wherewith he guided, and turned any way he listed, the Horse of wood, whereupon he rode thorow the Ayre; which Pinne, is a little bigger then the Thill of a Cart, and neere unto it is also seene Babieca his saddle: and in Roncesvals there yet hangs Rowlands horne, which is as bigge as a very great Ioyst, whence is inferred, that there were twelve Peeres, that there was a Pierres of Provance, that also there were Cides, and other such Knights as those which the world termes adventurers;

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Pança, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Pança, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

if not, let them also tell me, that the valiant Lusitanian, Iohn de Melo, was no Knight Errant, who went to Burgundie, and in the Citie of Ras fought with the famous Lord of Charni called Mosen Pierres, and after with Mosen Henry of Ramestan in the Citie of Basilea, and bore away the victorie in both the conflicts, to his eternall fame: and that there were no such curres as the adventures, and single combats begun, and ended in Burgundie, by the valiant Spaniards Pedro Barba, and Guttierre Quixada (from whom I my selfe am lineally discended) who overcame the Earle of Saint Pauls sonnes. They may also averre unto me, that Don Fernando de Guevarra went not to seeke adventures in Germanie, where he fought with Micer George a Knight of the Duke of Austria his house: Let them likewise affirme, that Suero de Quinonnes of the passage, his Iustes were but Iests; as also the enterprize of Mosen Lewis de falsoes, against Don Gonçalo de Guzman, a Gentleman of Castile, with many other renouned Acts, done as well by Christian Knights of this Kingdome, as of other forraine lands, and so authenticall and true, as that I am compelled to reiterate what I said before, that whosoever denies them, is defective of reason and good discourse.

Full of admiration remained the good Canon, to heare the composition, and medly, that Don-Quixote made of truths and fictions together; and at the great notice he had of all things that might any way concerne his Knight-hood Errant: and therefore he shaped him this answe: I cannot denie Sir Don-Quixote, but that some part of that which you have said is true, specially touching those Spanish adventurers of whome you have spoken; and will likewise graunt you, that there were twelve Peeres of France, but I will not beleeve that they have accomplished all that which the Archbishop Turpine hath left written of them: for the bare truth of the affaire is, that they were certaine Noblemen chosen out by the Kings of France, whom they called Peeres, because they were all equall in valour, qualitie, and worth; or if they were not, it was at least presumed that they were; and they were not much unlike the militarie orders of Saint Iames, or Calatrava, were in request, wherein it is

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

presupposed that such as are of the profession, are, or ought to be valorous, and well descended, Gentlemen : and as now they say, a Knight of Saint Iohn, or Alcantara, so in those times they said, a Knight of the twelve Peeres ; because they were twelve equals, chosen to be of that military order. That there was a Cid, and a Bernard of Carpio, is also doubtlesse ; that they have done the acts recounted of them, I beleeve there is very great cause to doubt. As touching the pinne of the good Earle Pierres, and that it is by Babieca his saddle in the Kings Armourie, I confesse that my sin hath made me so ignorant, or blind, that although I have [viewed] the saddle very well, yet could I never get a sight of that Pinne, how great soever you affirme it to bee. Well, it is there without question, said Don-Quixote, and for the greater confirmation thereof, they say it is laid up in a case of Neates leather, to keepe it from rusting. That may very well so be, said the Canon, yet by the orders that I have received, I doe not remember that ever I saw it : and although I should graunt it to be there, yet doe I not therefore oblige my selfe to beleieve the Histories of all the Amadises, nor those of the other rabblement of Knights, which bookes doe mention unto us : nor is it reason that so Honorable a man, adorned with so many good parts, and indowed with such a wit, as you are, should beleieve, that so many, and so strange follies, as are written in the raving bookees of Chivalrie, can be true.

CHAPTER

XXII

Wherein
the discrete
discourse
that passed
betweene
Sancho
Panca, and
his Lord
Don-Quixote,
is expressed.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXIII

Of the discreet contention betweene Don-Quixote
and the Canon, with other accidents.



HAT were a jest indeed, quoth Don-Quixote, that booke which are printed with the Kings licence, and approbation of those to whom their examination was committed, and that are read with universall delight and acceptance; and celebrated by great and little, rich, and poore, learned and ignorant, Plebeans and Gentlemen, and finally by all kinde of persons of what state or condition soever, should be so lying and fabulous; specially seeing they have such probabilitie of truth; seeing they describe unto us the Father, Mother, Countrey, Kinsfolke, Age, Towne, and Acts of such a Knight, or Knights, and that so exactly, point by point, and day by day: Hold your peace, and never speake againe such a blasphemie, and beleieve me, for I doe sincerely counsaile you what you, as a discreet man, ought to doe herein; and if not, reade them but once, and you shall see what delight you shall receive thereby: if not, tell me what greater pleasure can there be, then to behold (as one would say) even here and before our eyes, a great lake of pitch boiling hot, and many Serpents, Snakes, Lizarts, and other kinds of cruell and dreadfull beasts swimming a thwart it, and in every part of it, and that there issues out of the lake a most lamentable voyce, saying. ‘O thou Knight, whatsoeuer thou art, which doest behold the fearefull lake, if thou desirest to obtaine the good concealed under these horrid and blacke waters, shew the valour of thy strong brest, and throw thy selfe into the midst of this sable, and inflamed licour; for if thou doest not so, thou shalt not be worthy to discover the great wonders hidden in the

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

'seven Castles of the seven Fates, which are seated under
'these gloomie waves': and that scarce hath the Knight
heard the fearefull voice, when without entring into any
new discourses, or once considering the danger whereinto he
thrusts himselfe, yea or easing himselfe of the waight of his
ponderous armour, but only commanding himselfe unto
God, and his Ladie Mistris, hee plunges into the midst of
that burning puddle, and when he neither cares nor knowes
what may befall him, hee finds himselfe in the midst of
flourishing fields, with which the very Elisean plaines can in
no sort be compared; There it seemes to him that the
element is more transparent, and that the Sunne shines with
a clearer light then in our Orbe: there offers it selfe to
his greedie and curious eye, a most pleasing forrest replen-
ished with so greene, and well-sprede trees, as the verdure
thereof both joyes and quickens the sight; whilst the
eares are entertained by the harmonious, though artlesse
songs of infinite and enamelled birds, which traverse the
intricate boughes of that shadie habitation: Here hee dis-
covers a small stremme, whose fresh waters resembling liquid
Cristall, slides over the small sands, and white little stones,
which resemble sifted gold wherein Orientall Pearles are in-
chaced: there he discernes an artificiall Fountaine wrought
of motly Iasper and smooth Marble: and hard by it an other,
rudely and negligently framed, wherein the sundry Cockle
shels with the wreathed white and yellow houses of the
Pervincke, and Snaile intermingled, and placed after a dis-
orderly order (having now and then pieces of cleere Cristall,
and counterfeit Emeralds mingled among them) doe make a
worke of so gracefull varietie, as Art imitating Nature, doth
herein seeme to surpass her. Suddainely he discovers a
strong Castle or goodly Palace, whose walles are of beaten
gold, the pinacles of Diamonds, the gates of Iacints;
finally, it is of so exquisite workmanship, as although the
materials whereof it is built, are no worse then Diamonds,
Carbuncles, Rubies, Emeralds, Pearles, and Gold, yet is the
Architecture therof of more estimation and value then they,
and is there any more to be seene, after the seeing hereof,
then to see sallie out at the Castle gates, a goodly troupe of

CHAPTER

XXIII

Of the dis-
creet conten-
tion betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIE.

CHAPTER XXIII

Of the discreet contention betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

lovely Damzels, whose brave and costly attyre, if I should attempt to describe as it is laid downe in Histories, wee should never make an end? and shee that seemes the chiefeſt of all, to take presently our bold Knight, that threw himſelfe into the boyling lake, by the hand, and carry him into the rich Castle or Palace without ſpeaking a word, and cauſe him to ſtrip himſelfe as naked, as he was when his Mother bore him, and bathe him in very temperate waters, and afterward annoiſt him all over with precious ointments, and put on him a ſhirt of moſt fine, odoriferous, and perfumed Sendall; and then another Damzell to come ſuddainely, and casts on his backe a rich mantel, which they ſay is wont to bee worth, at the very leaſt a rich Citie, yea and more? then what a ſport it is, when they tell us after, that after this he is carried into another Hall, where he finds the tables covered ſo orderly as he reſts amazed? what, to ſee caſt on his hands water diſtilled all of Ambar, and moſt fragrant flowers? what, to ſee him ſeatet in a chaire of Yvorie? what, to ſee him ſerved by all the Damzels with marvailous silence? what, the ſetting before him ſuch varietie of accates, and thoſe ſo excellently dressed, as his appetitie knowes not to which of them it ſhall first addreſſe his hand? what, to heare the Musicke which ſounds whilſt he is at dinner, without knowing who makes it, or whence it comes? and after that dinner is ended, and the tables taken away, the Knight to remaine leaning on a chaire, and perhaps picking of his teeth, as the cuſtome is, and on a ſuddaine to enter at the Hal-dore another muſt more beautiſfull Damzell then any of the former, and to ſit by his ſide, and begin to recount unto him what Castle that is, and how ſhee is inchaunted therein, with many other things that amazed the Knight, and amazed the Readers. I will not enlarge my ſelfe any more in this matter, ſeeing that you may collect out of that which I have ſaid, that any part that is read of any booke of a Knight Errant, will delight, and astoniſh him, that ſhall perufe it with attention: and therefore I pray you beleeve me, and as I have ſaid already, reade thoſe kinde of bookeſ, and you ſhall finde, that they will exile all the melancholie that ſhall

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

trouble you, and rectifie your disposition, if by fortune it be depraved: for I dare affirme of my selfe, that since I am become a Knight Errant, I am valiant, curteous, liberall, well mannered, generous, gentle, bold, mild, patient, an indurer of labours, imprisonments, and inchauntments: and although it be but so little a while since I was shut up in a Cage like a mad man, yet doe I hope by the valour of mine arme (heaven concurring, and fortune not crossing me) to see my selfe within a few dayes, the King of some Kingdome, wherein I may shew the bountie and liberalitie included within my brest. For in good truth, Sir, a poore man is made unable to manifest the vertue of liberalitie towards any other, although he virtually possesse it himselfe in a most eminent degree: and the will to gratifie, which only consists of will, is as dead a thing, as Faith without Workes. For which cause I doe wish, that fortune would quickly present me some occasion whereby I might make my selfe an Emperour; that I may discover the desire I have to doe good unto my friends, but especially to this my poore Squire Sancho Pança, who is one of the honestest men in the world, on whome I would faine bestow the Earledome which I promised him many daies past, but that I feare mee he will not be able to governe his estate.

Sancho overhearing those last words of his masters, said, labour you, Sir Don-Quixote, to get me that Earledome as often promised by you, as much longed for by me, and I promise you that I will not want sufficiency to governe it, and though I should, yet have I heard say, that there are men in the world, who take Lordships to farme, paying the Lord so much by the yeere, and undertaking the care of the government thereof, whilst the Lord himselfe with outstretched legs doth live at his ease; enjoying the rents they bring him, and caring for nothing else: and so will I doe, and will not stand racking it to the utmost, but presently desist from all administration, and live merrily upon my rent like a young Duke; and so let the world wagge, and goe how it will. That, friend Sancho, is to bee understood, quoth the Canon, of enjoying the revenewes; but as concerning the administration of justice, the Lord of

CHAPTER

XXIII

Of the discreet contention betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXIII

Of the discreet contention betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

the Seigniory is bound to looke to it, in that is required a sufficiency and ability to governe, and above all, a good intention to deale justly, and determine rightly: for if this be wanting when we beginne, our meanes and ends will alwaies be subject to errour. And therefore is God wont as well to further the good designes of the simple, as to disfavour the bad ones of those that be wittily wicked.

I understand not those Philosophies, quoth Sancho Pança, but this I know well, that I would I had as speedily the Earldome, as I could tell how to governe it, for I have as much soule as another, and as much bodie as hee that hath most; and I would be as absolute a King in my estate, as any one would be in his; and being such, I would doe what I liked, and doing what I liked, I would take my pleasure, and taking my pleasure, I would be content; and when one is content, he hath no more to desire, and having no more to desire, the matter were ended: and then come the state when it will, or farewell it, and let us behold our selves, as one blinde man said to another. They are no bad Philosophies which thou comest out with kind Sancho, quoth the Canon, but yet for all that, there is much to be said concerning this matter of Earledomes. To that Don-Quixote replied: I know not what more may be said, onely I governe my selfe by the example of Amadis de Gaule, who made his Squire Earle of the firme Island: and therefore I may without scruple of conscience make Sancho Pança an Earle; for he is one of the best Squires that ever Knight Errant had. The Canon abode amazed at the well-compacted and orderly ravings of Don-Quixote; at the manner wherewith he had deciphered the adventure of the Knight of the Lake; at the impression which his lying booke had made into him: and finally he wondred at the simplicitie of Sancho Pança, who so earnestly desired to be made Earle of the county his Lord had promised him.

By this time the Canons servingmen, which had gone to the Inne for the sumpture Mule, were returned, and making their table of a carpet, and of the greene grasse of that

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

meadow, they sate down under the shadow of the trees, and did eat there, to the end that the waineman might not lose the commoditie of the pasture, as we have said before, and as they sate at dinner, they sodainly heard the sound of a little bell issuing from among the briars and brambles that were at hand, and instantly after, they saw come out of the thicket a very faire she-Goate, whose hide was poudred all over with blacke, white, and browne spots: after her followed a Goatheard crying unto her, and in his language bidding her stay, or returne againe to the fould: but the fugitive Goate all affrighted and feareful ranne towards the company, and as it were seeking in her dumbe manner to be protected, strayed neere unto them: then did the Goatheard arrive, and laying hold of her hornes (as if shee had beeene capable of his reprehension) said unto her. O yee wanton Ape, ye spotted Elfe, how come you to halt with me a late daies? what Wolves do skarre your daughter? will you not tell me, faire, what the matter is? But what can it be other then that you are a female, and therefore can never be quiet? a foule evill take your conditions, and all theirs, whom you so much resemble: turne backe, love, turne backe, and though you be not so content withall, yet shall you at least be more safe in your fold, and among the rest of your fellowes: for if you that shall guide and direct them, go thus distracted, and wandering, what then must they doe, what will become of them? The Goatheards words did not a little delight the hearers, but principally the Canon, who said unto him, I pray thee, good fellow, take thy rest heere awhile, and doe not hasten that Goate so much to her fould, for seeing she is a female, as thou sayest, she will follow her naturall instinct, how much soever thou opposest thy selfe unto it: take therefore that bit, and drinke a draught wherewithall thou maist temper thy choller, and the Goate will rest her the whilst: and saying so, hee gave him the hinder quarter of a cold Rabbet, which he receiving, rendred him many thankes, and drinking a draught of wine, did pacifie himselfe, and said presently after: I would not have you, my masters, account me simple, although I spoke to this beast

CHAPTER
XXIII

Of the dis-
creet conten-
tion betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXIII

Of the discreet contention betweene
Don-Quixote
and the
Canon,
with other
accidents.

in so earnest a fashion ; for in truth the words which I used unto her, were not without some mysterie. I am indeed rustick, and yet not so much, but that I know how to converse with men, and with beasts. I beleefe that easily quoth the Curate, for I know alreadie by experience, that the woods breed learned men, and sheepe coats containe Philosophers. At the least, Sir, replied the Goatheard, they have among them experienced men : and that you may give the more credite to this truth, and as it were, touch it with your owne hands (although till I be bidden, I may seeme to invite my selfe) I will, if you please to heare me but awhile, relate unto you a very true accident, which shall make good what this Gentleman (pointing to the Curate) and my selfe have affirmed. To this Don-Quixote answered, because the Case doth seeme to have in it some shadow of Knightly adventures, I will for my part listen unto thee with a very good will, and I presume that all these Gentlemen will doe the like, so great is their discretion, and desire to know curious novelty which amaze, delight, and entertaine the senses, as I doe certaintely beleeve thy history will. Therefore begin it, friend, and all of us will lend our eares unto it. I except mine quoth Sancho, for I will goe with this pastie unto that little streame, where I meane to fill my selfe for three daies ; for I have heard my Lord Don-Quixote say, that a Knight Errants Squire must eate when he can, and alwaies as much as he can, because that oftentimes they enter by chance into some wood so intricate, as they cannot get out of it againe in five or sixe daies : and if a mans panch be not then well stuffed, or his wallet well stored, he may there remaine, and be turned as many times it happens, into mummie. Thou art in the right of it, Sancho, quoth Don-Quixote, goe therefore where thou wilt, and eate what thou maist, for I am alreadie satisfied, and onely want refection for my minde, which now I will give it by listening to this good fellow. The same will wee also give unto ours quoth the Canon, who therewithall intreated the Goatheard to keepe promise, and beginne his tale Then he stroking once or twice his prettie Goate, (which he yet held fast by the hornes) said thus: Lye downe pide

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

foole, by mee, for we shall have time enough to returne home againe. It seemed that the Goat understood him; for as soone as her master sate downe, she quietly stretched her selfe along by him, and looking him in the face, did give to understand, that she was attentive to what hee was saying. And then he began his history in this manner.

CHAPTER
XXIII
Of the dis-
creet conten-
tion betweene
Don-Quixote,
etc.

CHAPTER XXIIII

Relating that which the Goatheard told to those that carried away Don-Quixote.



HEERE is a Village distant some three leagues from this valley, which albeit it be little, is one of the richest of this commark: therein sometime did dwell a wealthie farmer of good respect, and so good, as although reputation and riches are commonly joyned together, yet that which he had, was rather got him by his vertue, then by any wealth he possessed: But that which did most accumulate his happinesse (as he himselfe was wont to say) was, that he had a daughter of so accomplished beauty, so rare discretion, comeliness, and vertue, that as many as knew and beheld her, admired to see the passing indowments wherewith heaven and nature had inriched her. Being a child, she was fayre, and increasing daily in feature, she was at the age of sixteene most beautiful. The fame whereof extended it selfe over all the bordering villages, but why say I the bordring villages alone, if it spread it selfe over the farthest cities, yea and entred into the kings Palace, and into the eares of all kinde of people? so that they came from all parts to behold her as a rare thing, and patterne of miracles? her father did carefully keepe her,

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXIIII

Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

and she likewise heeded her selfe : for there is neither guard locke, nor bolt able to keepe a mayden better, then is he owne wariness, and care. The wealth of the father, and worth of the daughter moved divers, as well of his owne village as strangers, to demaund her to wife, but he (as one whom the disposall of so rich a Iewell most neerely concerned) was much perplexed, and unable to determine on whom, among such an infinite number of importunate woers, he might bestow her: among others that bore this good wil towards her, I my selfe was one to whom gave many, and very great hopes of good successe, the knowledge that her father had of me, my birth in the same village, my descent honest, and bloud untainted, flourishing in yeares, very rich in goods, and no lesse in gifts of the mind. Another of the same village and qualities, was also a suiter unto her: which was an occasion to hold her in suspence, and put his will in the ballance, deeming as he did, that she might be bestowed on either of us two: and that he might be rid of his doubt, he resolved to tell it to Leandra, (for so do they call the rich maide which hath brought mee to extreme misery) noting discreetly, that seeing we both were equals, it would not be amisse to leave in his deere daughter power the making choyce of whether she liked best. A thing worthy to be noted by all those parents that would have their children marry. Wherein my meaning is not, that they should permit them to make a bad or a base choyce but that they propound certaine good ones, and referre to their liking which of them they will take. I know now what was the liking of Leandra, but only know this, that the father posted us off, by alleaging the over greene yeare of his daughter, and using generall termes, which neither obliged him, nor discharged us. My rivall was called Anselmo, and my selfe Eugenio : that you may also have some justice of the persons which were actors in this tragedie whose conclusion is yet depending, but threatens much future disaster.

About the very same time arrived to our village one Vincente of the Rose, sonne to a poore labourer of the same place, which Vincente returned as then from Italy, and

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

divers other countries, wherein he had beene a souldier, for being of some twelve yeeres of age, a certaine Captaine, that with his company passed along by our village, did carry him away with him, and the Youth, after a dozen yeares more, came backe againe attired like a soldier, and painted with a hundred colours, full of a thousand devises of Cristall, five steele chaines : to day he would put on some gay thing, the next day some other, but all of them slight painted, and of little waight, lesse worth. The clownish people, which are naturally malicious, and if they have but ever so little idlenesse or leasure become malice it selfe, did note and reckon up all his braveries, and jewels, and found that he had but three suits of apparrell of different colours, with garters and stockings answerable to them ; but he used so many disguisements, varieties, transformations, and inventions, which they, as if they had not counted them all, some one would have sworne that he had made shew of more then tenne suits of apparrell, and more then twenty plumes of feathers : and let not that which I tell you of the apparrell be counted impertinent, or from the matter ; for it makes a principall part in the history. He would sit on a bench that stood under a great Poplar tree in the midst of the market place, and there would hold us all, with gaping mouthes, listening to the gallant adventures, and resolute acts he recounted unto us, there was no Land in all the world, whose soile he had not trodden on, no battell wherein he had not beene present, he had slaine more Moores, then the kingdomes of Morocco, and Tuney contained, and undertaken more single combats, as he said, then ever did either Gant, Luna, or Diego Garcia de Paredes, and a thousand others whom he named, and yet hee still came away with the victory, without having ever left one drop of blood. On the other side he would shew us signes of wounds, which although they could not be discerned, yet would he perswade us, that they were the markes of bullets, which he received in divers skirmishes, and warres. Finally he would thou his equals, and those which knew him very well, with marvellous arrogancy : and said, that his arme was his father, his works his linage, and that beside his

CHAPTER
XXIII
Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXIIII

Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

being a Souldier, hee ought not a whit to the King. To these his arrogancies was annexed some superficall skill in musicke, for he could scratch a little on a Gytterne, and some would say that hee made it speake: but his many graces made not a stop there; for hee had likewise some shadowes of Poetry, and so would make a ballad of a league and a halfe long, upon every toy that hapned in the Village.

This souldier therefore, whom I have deciphered, this Vincente of the Rose, this braggard, this Musician, this Poet, eyed and beheld many times by Leandra from a certaine window of her house that looked into the Market place; and the golden shew of his attire enamoured her: and his Ditties enchanted her; for hee would give twentie Copies of every one he composed: The report of his worthy acts, beautified by himselfe, came also unto her eares, and finally (for so it is likely the Divell had ordered the matter) she became in Love with him, before he presumed to think once of soliciting her. And as in Love adventures no one is accomplished with more facilitie, then that which is favoured by the womans desire; Leandra and Vincente made a short and easie agreement: and ere any one of her suiters could once suspect her desires, shee had fully satisfied them, abandoned her deere and loving Fathers house, (for her mother lives not) and running away from the Village with the Souldier, who departed with more triumph from that enterprise, then from all the others which he had arrogated to himselfe. The accident amazed all the Towne, yea and all those to whome the rumour thereof arrived, were astonished, Anselmo amazed, her father sorrowfull, her kinsfolke ashamed. The ministers of Iustice carefull, and the Troupers readie to make pursuit; all the wayes were laide, and the woods, and every other place merely searched; and at the end of three dayes, they found the lustfull Leandra hidden in a Cave within a wood, naked in her smocke, and dispoyled of a great summe of money, and many precious Jewels, which shee had brought away with her: they returned her to her dolefull fathers presence, where asking how shee became so dispoyled, shee presently confessed, that Vincent

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

of the Rose had deceived her : for having passed his word to make her his wife, he perswaded her to leave her fathers house, and made her beleeve that hee would carrie her to the richest, and most delightfull Citie of the world, which was Naples. And that shee through indiscretion, and his fraude, had given credit to his words, and robbing her father, stole away with him the very same night that shee was missed ; and that he caried her to a very rough Thicket, and shut her up in that Cave wherein they found her : She also recounted how the Souldier, without touching her honour, had rob'd her of all that shee carried, and leaving her in that Cave, was fled away ; which successe stroke us into greater admiration then all the rest : for wee could hardly be induced to beleeve the yong gallants continencie, but shee did so earnestly protest it, as it did not a little comfort her comfortlesse father, who made no reckoning of the riches hee had lost, seeing his daughter had yet reserved that Iewell, which being once gone, could never againe be recovered. The same day that Leandra appeared, shee also vanished out of our sights, being conveied away by her Father, and shut up in a Nunnerie at a certaine Towne not farre off ; hoping that time would illiterate some part of the bad opinion already conceived of his daughters facilitie. Leandra her youth served to excuse her errour, at least with those which gained nothing by her being good or ill ; but such as knew her discretion, and great wit, did not attribute her sinne to ignorance, but rather to her too much lightnesse, and the naturall infirmitie of that sexe, which for the most part is inconsidereate, and slipperie. Leandra being shut up, Anselmos eyes lost their light, or at least beheld not any thing that could delight them ; and mine remained in darknesse without light, that could addresse them to any pleasing object in Leandraes absence. Our grieves increased, our patience diminished, wee cursed the Souldiers ornaments, and abhord her Fathers want of looking to her. To be briefe, Anselmo and my selfe, resolved to abandon the Village, and come to this Valley, where hee feeding a great flocke of Sheepe of his owne, and I as copious a Heard of Goates of mine, we passe our

CHAPTER
XXIII
Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIE

CHAPTER XXIII

Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

lives among these trees, giving vent to our passions, either by singing together the beautiful Leandras praises, or dispraises: or by sighing alone, and alone communicating our quarrelsome complaints with heaven. Many others of Leandra's Suitors have since, by our example, come to these intricate woods, where they use our very exercise; and there are so many, as it seemes that this place is converted into the Pastorall Arcadia, it is ful of shepheards and Sheep folds, and there is no one part thereof wherein the name of the beautiful Leandra resoundeth not: There one doth curse her, and termeth her humors inconstant and dishonest an other condemnes her of being so facile and light; som one absolves, and pardons her, another condemnes and despises her, and celebrates her beautie, an other execrates her disposition, and finally, all blame, but yet adore her, and the raving distraction of them all, doth so farre extend i selfe, as some one complaines of disdaine, that never spok word unto her, and some one laments, and feelesthe irragfits of jealousie, though shee never ministred any occasion thereof; for as I have said her sinne was knowne before her desires; There is no Clift of a Rocke, no banke of streame, nor shadow of a tree, without some Shepheard or other, that breathes out his misfortunes to the silen ayre. The Echo repeates Leandras name, wheresoever it can be formed; the woods resound Leandra, the brokes do murmur Leandra, and Leandra holds us all perplexed and enchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowledge what we feare.

And among all this flocke of frantick men, none shewe more, or lesse judgement, then my companion Anselmo; who having so many other titles under which hee might plain him, onely complaines of absence, and doth to the sound of a rebecke (which he handles admirably well) sing certaine dolefull verses, which fully discover the excellencie of his conceit. I follow a more easie, and (in mine opinion) more certayne way; to wit, I rayle on the lightnes of womer on their inconstancie, double dealing, dead promises, crack trust, and the small discretion they shewe in placing of their affections, and this Sir was the occasion of the words, an

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

reasons I lately used to this Goate, whom I doe esteeme but little, because shee is a female, although shee be otherwise the best of all my heard: And this is the Historie which I promised to tell you, wherein if I have beene prolix, I will bee altogether as large in doing you any service, for I have here at hand my Cabine, and therein store of fresh milke, and savory cheese, with many sortes of excellent fruite, no lesse agreeable to the sight, then pleasing to the taste.

CHAPTER
XXIII
Relating that
which the
Goat-heard
told to those
that carried
away Don-
Quixote.

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling out of Don-Quixote and the
Goateheard: with the adventure of the
disciplinants, to which the Knight
gave end to his cost.



HE Goateheards tale bred a generall delight in all the hearers, but specially in the Canon, who did very exactly note the manner wherewithall he delivered it, as different from the stile or discourse of a rude Goateheard, as approaching to the discretion of a perfect Courtier; and therefore he said, that the Curate had spoken very judiciously, in affirming that the woods bred learned men, all of them made bountifull tenders of their friendship and service to Eugenio, but hee that enlarged himselfe more then the rest, was Don-Quixote, who said unto him: certes, friend Goateheard, if I were at this time able to undertake any adventure, I would presently set forward, and fall in hand with it to doe you a good turne, and I would take Leandra out of the Monasterie (wherein without doubt shee is restrained against her will) in despight of the Ladie Abbesse, and of all those that should take her

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LII]

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard : with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

part; and would put her into your hands, to the end ye
might dispose of her at your pleasure, yet still observing t
lawes of Knighthood, which command, that no man do
any wrong, and offer violence unto a Damzell: yet I hope
in our Lord God, that the skill of a malicious inchaunt
shall not be of such force, but that the science of a better
meaning wisard shall prevale against him; and whensoeuer
that shall befall, I doe promise you my helpe and favou
as I am bound by my profession, which chiefly consists i
asisting the weake and distressed.

The Goateheard beheld him, and seeing the Knight so i
arrayed, and of so evill-favoured a countenance, hee wondred
and questioned the Barber, who sate neare to him, thus:
pray you Sir, who is this man, of so strange a figure, and
that speakes so odly? who else should he be, answereth
the Barber, but the famous Don-Quixote of the Mancha, th
righter of wrongs, the redresser of injuries, the protector of
Damsels, the affrighter of Giants, and the overcommer of
battails? that which you say of this man, answered the
Goateheard, is very like that which in booke of Chivalrie
written of Knights Errant; who did all those things whic
you apply to this man: and yet I beleive that either yo
jest, or else that this Gentlemans head is voide of braine.
Thou art a great villain, said Don-Quixote, and thou
art hee whose pate wants braines; for mine is fuller the
the very, very whoores that bore thee; and saying so, an
snatching up a loafe of bread that stooode by him, he raught
the Goateheard so furious a blow withall, as it beate his nos
flat to his face: but the other, who was not acquainted wit
such jests, and saw how ill he was handled, without havin
respect to the Carpet, Napkins, or those that were eating
he leaped upon Don-Quixote, and taking hold of his collie
with both the hands, would certainly have strangled him
if Sancho Pança had not arrived at that very instant, an
taking him fast behinde, had not throwen him backe on the
Table, crushing dishes, breaking glasses, and shedding, an
overthrowing all that did lie upon it. Don-Quixote seein
himselfe free, returned to get upon the Goateheard, wh
all besmeered with bloud, and trampled to pieces unde

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

Sancho's feete, groped here and there groveling as hee was for some knife or other to take a bloody revenge withall, but the Canon and Curate prevented his purpose ; and yet, by the Barbers assistance, he got under him Don-Quixote, on whome hee rained such a shower of buffets, as hee powred as much blood from the poore Knights face, as had done from his owne : The Canon and Curate were ready to burst for laughter : The Troupers danced for sport ; every one hissed, as men use to do when Dogges fall out, and quarrell together : onely Sancho Pança was wood, because he could not get from one of the Canons Servingmen, who withheld him from going to helpe his Master. In conclusion, all being verie merry, save the two buffetants, that tugged one another extremely, they heard the sound of a trumpet so dolefull, as it made them turne their faces towards that part from whence it seemed to come : but hee that was most troubled at the noyse thereof, was Don-Quixote ; who although he was under the Goatheard, full sore against his will, and by him exceedingly bruised and battered, yet said unto him : brother divell (for it is impossible that thou canst be any other, seeing that thou hast had valour and strength to subiect my forces) I pray thee let us make truce for one onely houre ; for the dolorous sound of that trumpet which toucheth our eares, doth mee thinks, invite me to some new adventure. The Goatheard, who was weary of buffeting, and being beaten, left him off incontinently, and Don-Quixote stood up, and turned himselfe towards the place from whence he imagined the noyse to proceede, and presently he espyed descending from a certaine height many men apparellled in white like disciplinants. The matter indeed was, that the clowdes had that yeere denied to bestow their due on the earth, and therefore they did institute Rogations, Processions, and Disciplines, throughout all that Countrey, to desire almighty God to open the hands of his mercy, and to bestow some raine upon them : and to this effect, the people of a Village, neere unto that place, came in Procession to a devout Eremitage builded upon one of the hilles that invironed that Vally.

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard : with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard: with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

Don-Quixote noting the strange attyre of the Disciplinants, without any calling to memorie how hee had often seer the like before, did forthwith imagine that it was some new adventure, and that the triall thereof only appertained to him, as to a Knight errant: and this his presumption was fortified the more, by beleeving that an Image which they carried all covered over with blacke, was some principal Lady whom those miscreants and discourteous Knights did beare away perforce. And as soone as this fell into his braine, he leaped lightly towards Rozinante, that went feeding up and downe the Plaines, and dismounting from his pomell the bridle, and his target that hanged thereat, he bridled him in a trice; and taking his sword from Sancho, goe instantly upon his horse, and then imbracing his target said in a loud voyce to all those that were present: you shall now see, O valorous company, how important a thing it is to have in the world such Knights as professe the order of Chivalrie errant: now I say, you shall discerne by the freeing of that good Ladie, who is there carryed captive away, whether Knights adventurous are to be held in price and saying so, he strucke Rozinante with his heeles (for spurres he had none) and making him to gallop (for it is not read in any part of this true Historie, that Rozinante did ever passe one formall or full career) he posted to encounter the disciplinants, although the Curate, Canon and Barber, did what they might to withhold him, but all was not possible; and much lesse could he be detained by these outcries of Sancho, saying, whether do you goe, Sir Don-Quixote? what Divels doe you beare in your brest that incite you to runne thus against the Catholike faith? see Sir, unfortunate that I am, how that is a Procession of disciplinants, and that the Lady whom they beare, is the blessed Image of the immaculate Virgin, looke Sir, what you doe, for at this time it may well be said, that you are not you know what. But Sancho laboured in vaine, for his Lord rode with so greedie a desire to encounter the white men, and deliver the morning Ladie, as he heard not a word, and although he had, yet would he not then have returned back at the Kings commandement. Being come

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

at last, neere to the Procession, and stopping Rozinante (who had already a great desire to rest himselfe a while) he said with a troubled and hoarse voice: O you that cover your faces, perhaps because you are not good men, give eare and listen to what I shall say: the first that stood at this alarme, were those which carried the Image; and one of the foure Priests which sung the Litanies, beholding the strange shape of Don-Quixote, the leanness of Rozinante, and other circumstances worthy of laughter, which he noted in our Knight, returned him quickly this answere Good Sir, if you would say any thing to us, say it instantly; for these honest men, as you see, are toiled extremely; and therefore wee cannot, nor is it reason wee should stand lingring to heare any thing, if it be not so brief, as it may be delivered in two words; I will say it in one, said Don-Quixote, and it is this, that you doe forthwith give libertie to that beautifull Lady, whose teares and pittifull semblance cleerely denote, that you carrie her away against her will, and have done her some notable injurie; and I, who was borne to right such wrongs, will not permit her to passe one step forward, untill shee be wholly possessed of the freedome shee doth so much desire and deserve. All those that over-heard Don-Quixote, gathered by his words that he was some distracted man; and therefore beganne to laugh very hartily, which laughing seemed to adde gun-powder to his choler; for laying his hand on his sword without any more words, he presently assaulted the Image-carriers; one whereof leaving the charge of the burden to his fellowes, came out to encounter the Knight with a wooden forke (whereon he supported the beere whensoever they made a stand) and receyving upon it a great blow which Don-Quixote discharged at him, it parted the forke in two; and yet hee with the peece that remained in his hand, returned the Knight such a thwacke upon the shoulder, on the sword side, as his target not being able to make resistance against that rusticall force, poore Don-Quixote was overthrowne to the ground, and extremely bruised.

Sancho Pança (who had followed him, puffing and blowing as fast as he could) seeing him overthrowne, cryed to his

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard: with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIE

CHAPTER

XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard: with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

adversary that hee should strike him no more: for he wa
a poore inchaunted Knight, that had never all the daies o
his life done any man harme: but that which detayned th
swaine, was not Sanchos outcries, but to see that Don
Quixote stirred neyther hand nor foote, and therefore be
leeving that he had slaine him, hee tucked up his coaste t
his girdle as soone as he could, and fled away through th
fields like a Deere. In the meane while, Don-Quixote
Companions did hasten to the place where hee lay, wher
those of the Procescion seeing them (but principally th
troupers of the holy Brotherhood with their Crosse-bowes
runne towards them, did feare some disastrous successe; and
therefore, they gathered together in a troupe about th
Image, and lifting up their hoods, and laying fast hold o
their whips, and the Priests on their Tapers, they attende
the assault, with resolution both to defend themselves, and
offend the assaylants if they might: but Fortune disposed
the matter better then they expected; for Sancho did no
thing else then throw himselfe on his Lords body, making
over him the most dolorous and ridiculous lamentation o
the world, and beleeving that hee was dead. The Curat
was knownen by the other Curate that came in the proces
sion; and their acquaintance appeased the conceived fear
of the two squadrons. The first Curate, in two words, [told
the other what Don-Quixote was, and therefore he, and al
the crue of the Disciplinants went over to see, whether th
poore Knight were dead or alive; and then might hear
Sancho Pança, with the teares in his eyes, bewayling him i
this manner. O flower of Chivalrie, who hast with one blow
alone ended the Carreere of thy so well bestowed Peeres? C
renowme of this linage, the honour and glorie of all th
Mancha, yea and of all the world beside; which seeing i
wanteth thee, shall remaine full of miscreants, secure from
beeing not punished for their misdeedes. O liberal beyond
all Alexanders, seeing thou hast given mee, for onely for eigh
moneths service, the best Iland that the Sea doeth compass
or ingirt. O humble to the proud, and stately to th
humbled, undertaker of perils, indurer of affronts, enamoured
without cause, imitator of good men, whip of the evil

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

enemie of the wicked, and in conclusion, Knight Errant, then which no greater thing may be said.

Don-Quixote was called againe to himselfe by Sancho his out-cries, and then the first word that ever he spake was ; he that lives absented from thee most sweet Dulcinea, is subject to greater miseries then this : helpe me friend Sancho, to get up into the enchanted Chariote againe, for I am not in plight to oppresse Rozinantes Saddle, having this shoulder broken all into peeces that I will doe with a very good wil, my deere Lord, replied the Squire ; and let us retурne to my village, in company of those Gentlemen, which desire your welfare so much ; and there we will take order for some other voyage, which may bee more profitable, and famous then this hath beene. Thou speakest reasonably, Sancho, replied Don-Quixote, and it will bee a great wisdome to let overpassee the crosse aspect of those Planets that raigne at this present. The Canon, Curate, and Barbour commended his resolution : and so having taken delight enough in Sancho Panças simplicitie, they placed Don-Quixote as before in the Teame. The Processioners returning into their former order, did prosecute their way ; the goateheard tooke leave of them all. The troupers would not ride any farther, and therefore the Curate satisfied them for the paines they had taken : The Canon intreated the Curate to let him understand all that succeeded of Don-Quixote ; to wit, whether he amended of his frenzie, or grew more distracted, and then he tooke leave, to continue his journey. Lastly, all of them departed, the Curate, Barber, Don-Quixote, Sancho Pança, and the good Rozinante onely remaining behind. Then the waineman yoked his Oxen, and accommodated the Knight on a bottle of Hay ; and afterward followed on in his wonted low maner, that way which the Curate directed. At the end of two dayes they arrived to Don-Quixotes Village, into which they entred about noone ; this befell on a Sunday, when all the people were in the Market stead, through the middle whereof Don-Quixotes Cart did passe : all of them drew neare to see what came in it, and when they knew their Countrie man, they were marveilously astonished : the whilst a little boy ranne

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling out of Don-Quixote and the Goate-heard : with the adventure of the disciplinants, to which the Knight gave end to his cost.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER

XXV

Of the falling
out of Don
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard : with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

home before, to tell the old Wife and the Knights niese, that their Lord and uncle was returned, very leane, pale, disfigured, and stretcht all along on a bundell of Hay.

It would have moved one to compassion, to have heard the lamentations, and out-cries, then raisd by the two good women, the blowes they gave themselves, and the curses and execrations which they powred out against all Bookes of Knighthood, all which was againe renewed, when they saw Don-Quixote himselfe entred in at their doores. At the newes of this his arrival, Sancho Panças wife repaired also to get some tidings of her goodman ; for shee had learned that hee was gone away with the Knight, to serve him as his Squire, and as soon as ever shee saw her husband, the question shee asked him was, whether the Asse were in health or no. Sancho answered that he was come in better health then his Master : God be thanked, quoth she, who hath done me so great a favour : but tell mee now friend, what profit hast thou reaped by this thy Squireship ? What Peticote hast thou brought me home ? What shooes for thy little boyes ? I bring none of these things, good wife, quoth Sancho, although I bring other things of more moment [and] estimation : I am very glad of that, quoth his wife ; shew me those things of more moment and estimation good friend : for I would faine see them, to the end that this heart of mine may be cheered, which hath beene so swolne and sorrowfull, all the time of thine absence. Thou shalt see them at home quoth Sancho, and therefore rest satisfied for this time ; for and it please God, that we travaille once againe to seeke adventures, thou shalt see me shortly after an Earle, or Governoour of an Iland, and that not every ordinarie one neither, but of one of the best in the World. I pray God, Husband, it may be so, (replied she) for wee have very great need of it. But what means that Iland ? for I understand not the word. Honny is not made for the Asses mouth, quoth Sancho : wife thou shalt know it in good time, yea, and shalt wonder, to heare the title of Ladiship given thee by all thy vassalles. What is that thou speakest, Sancho, of Lordships, Ilands, and vassalles ? Answered Ioan Pança (for so was shee called, although her

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

husband and shee were not kinsfolke; but by reason that in the Mancha, the wives are usually called after their husbands surname) Doe not busie thy selfe Ioan, quoth Sancho, to know those things on such a suddaine; let it suffice that I tell thee the truth, and therewithall sow up thy mouth. I will onely say thus much unto thee, as it were by the way, that there is nothing in the world so pleasant, as for an honest man to be the Squire of a Knight Errant, that seekes Adventures. It is very true, that the greatest number of Adventures found out, succeeded not to a mans satisfaction so much as he would desire: for of a hundred that are incountred, the ninetie and nine are wont to be crosse and untoward ones; I know it by experience, for I have come away my selfe out of some of them well canvassed, and out of others well beaten. But yet for all that, it is a fine thing to expect events, traverse groves, search woods, tread on rockes, visit Castles, and lodge in Innes at a mans pleasure, without paying the divell a crosse.

All these discourses passed betweene Sancho Pança, and his Wife Ioan Pança, whilst the old woman and Don-Quixotes Niece did receive him, put off his clothes, and lay him downe in his ancient bed: hee looked upon them very earnestly, and could not conjecture where he was. The Curate charged the Niece to cherish her Vnkle very carefully, and that they should looke wel that he made not the third escape; relating at large all the adoe that they had to bring him home. Here both the women renewed their exclamations: their execrations of all bookees of Knight-hood here came to be reiterated: here they besought heaven to throw downe into the very Center of the bottomlesse Pit, the outcries of so many lies and ravings. Finally, they remained perplexed and timerous, that they should lose again their Master and Vnkle, as soon as he was any thing recovered; and it befell just as they suspected: but the Authour of this Historie, although he have with all diligence and curiositie inquired after the Acta atchieved by Don-Quixote in his third sally to seeke Adventures, yet could he never attaine (at least by authenticall Writings) to any notice of them: Only Fame hath left in the memories

CHAPTER
XXV
Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard: with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

CHAPTER XXV

Of the falling
out of Don-
Quixote and
the Goate-
heard : with
the adven-
ture of the
disciplinants,
to which the
Knight gave
end to his cost.

of the Mancha, that Don-Quixote, after his third escape, was at Caragoça ; and present at certaine famous justs made in that Cittie ; and that therein befell him events most worthy of his valour and good wit. But of his end hee could finde nothing, nor ever should have knowne ought, if good fortune had not offered to his view an old Phisition, who had in his custodie a leaden Box, which, as he affirmed, was found in the ruines of an old Eremitage, as it was a re-pairing ; in which box were certaine scrolles of Parchment written with Gothicall Characters, but containing Castilian verses, which comprehended many of his Acts, and specified Dulcinea of Toboso her beautie, decyphered Rozinante, and intreated of Sancho Panças fidelity ; as also of Don-Quixotes Sepulchre, with sundry Epitaphes, and Elogies, of his life and manners, and those that could bee read and copied out throughly, were those that are here set downe by the faithfull Authour of this new and unmatched relation. Which Authour demaunds of the Readers no other guerdon, in regard of his huge travaile spent in the search of all the old records of the Mancha, for the bringing thereof unto light, but that they will deigne to afford it as much credit as discreet men are wont to give unto booke of Knighthood, which are of so great reputation now a daies in the world ; for here-with he will rest most fully contented, and satisfied; and with-all incouraged to publish and seeke out for other discourses, if not altogether so true as this, at least of as great, both invention, and recreation. The first words written in the Scrowle of Parchement, that was found in the leaden box, were these.

iv] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

THE ACADEMIKES OF ARGAMASILLA,
a Towne of the Mancha, on the life and death
of the valorous Don-Quixote of the Mancha,
hoc scripserunt.

AN EPITAPHE OF MONICONGO THE ACADEMIKE OF ARGAMASILLA, TO DON-QUIXOTES SEPULCHER

THE clattering Thunderbolt that did adorne
The Mancha, with more spoiles then Iason, Creete :
The wit, whose wether-cocke, was sharpe as Thorne,
When somewhat flatter it to be was meeke.
The arme which did his power so much dilate,
As it Gaeta and Cathay did retch.
The dreadfullst Muse, and eke discreetest, that
In brazen sheetes, did praises ever stretch.
He that the Amadises left behinde,
And held the Galaors but in small esteeme :
Both for his braverie and his loving minde.
He dumbe that made Don Belianis to seeme :
And he that farre on Rozinante erde,
Under this frozen stone doth lye interde.

PANIAGUADO AN ACADEMIKE OF ARGA- MASILLA, IN PRAISE OF DULCINEA OF TOBOSO

SONNET

SHE which you view with triple face and sheene,
High brested and couragious like a man,
Is tall Dulcinea of Toboso Queene,
Of great Quixote welbeloved than.

THE FIRST PART OF THE [LIB.

He for her sake, treads th' one and th' other side
Of the browne mountaine, and the famous fields
Of Montiel and Aran Iuez so wide,
On foote all tyrde, loaden with speare and shield.
(The fault was Rozinantes :) O hard starre !
That this Manchegan Dame and Worthy Knight,
In tender yeeres when people strongest are,
She lost by death the glimpse of beautie bright :
And he although in Marble richly done :
Yet Loves wrath and deceits, she could not shunne.

CAPRICHIOSO THE MOST INGENIOUS ACADEMICKE OF ARGAMASILLA, IN PRAISE OF ROZINANTE, DON-QUIXOTE HIS STEEDE

SONNET

Into the proud erected Diamond stocke,
Which Mars with bloudie plants so often boared,
Halfe wood with valour, the Manchegan stucks
His wav'ring Standard : and his Armes restored.
For them thereon he hung, and his bright sword,
Wherewith he hacks, rents, parts, and overthowes ;
(New prowesses,) to which Art must affoord
New stiles on this new Palatine to gloze.
And if Gaule, much her Amadis does prize
Whose brave discendants have illustred Greece,
And fild it full of Tropheis and of Fame :
Much more Bellonas Court doth solemnize
Quixote : whose like in Gaule, nor Grecia is,
So honour'd none, as in Mancha, his name.
Let no oblivion his glory staine,
Seeing in swiftnesse Rozinant his steede
Even Bayard doth, and Briliador exceede.

IV] HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

BURLADOR ACADEMICKE OF ARGAMASILLA, TO SANCHO PANÇA

SONNET

THIS Sancho Pança is of body little,
But yet, O miracle ! in valour great,
The simplest Squire, and sooth to say, least subtle
That in this world I sweare, lived ever yet.
From being an Earle, he scarce was a threeds bread,
Had not at once conspir'd to crosse his guerdon,
The malice of the times, and men misled,
Which scarce an Asse incountring, would him pardon.
Upon the like he rode, O give me leave
To tell how this meeke Squire after the horse
Mild Rozinante, and his Lord did drive !
O ! then vaine hopes of men, what thing is worse ?
Which prooves us, desired ease to lend,
Yet doe at last in smokes our glories end.

CACHIDIABLO ACADEMICKE OF ARGAMASILLA, ON DON-QUIXOTE HIS TOMB

AN EPITAPH

THE worthy Knight lies there
Well bruis'd, but evil-andant
Who borne on Rozinante
Rode waiers both farre and neere.
Sancho his faithfull Squire
Pança ycleep'd also
Lieth besides him too :
In his trade without peere.

HISTORIE OF DON QUIXOTE

TIQUITTOC ACADEMICKE OF ARGAMASILLA, ON DULCINEA OF TOBOSOS SEPULCHER

AN EPIITAPH

DULCINEA here beneath
Lies, though of flesh so round,
To dust and ashes ground,
By fowle and ougly Death.
Shee was of gentle breath,
And somewhat like a Dame,
Being great Quixotes flame,
And her Townes glorie, eath.

These were the Verses that could be read, as for the rest, in respect that they were halfe consumed and eaten away by time, they were delivered to a Scholler, that hee might by conjectures declare their meaning: and we have had intelligence that he hath done it with the cost of many nights watching, and other great paines, and that he meanes to publish them, and also gives hope of a third sallie made by Don-Quixote.

FINIS

